



Inch of Radiance

Inch of Radiance (寸芒) is a Chinese fantasy genre web novel with "I Eat Tomatoes" as the author, with 1,963,597 characters, 17,031,229 hits, and 2,394,804 recommendations and its first public release on the Chinese web.

Synopsis: A flying dagger arrives, an inch of radiance appears; the Overlord has passed on a successor to the people of modern times! Flying dagger! A new type of cultivation path through flying daggers!

The story revolves around an uniquely skilled "Li Flying Dagger" youth. Because his meridians were ordinary, he could not achieve greatness through internal cultivation. Later however, he was able to obtain a Dan medicine; a refining pellet that is able to shed one's mortal body and exchange one's bones, the "Essence Cleansing Dan!"

Info:

<https://www.mangaupdates.com/series.html?id=122366>

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/inch-of-radiance/>

Raws:

<http://quanben-xiaoshuo.com/xiazai/4/cunmang.html>

Translator:

<http://pikatranslations.com>

NejiSpira

wuxiatranslationsdl.wordpress.com



Table of chapters:

This Toc is from the translator website!

But in the epub, i joined part 1 and part 2 of all chapters!

Book 1 – Snowy Night

IoR Book 1 Chapter 1 - Heavenly Net

IoR Book 1 Chapter 2 - Flying dagger's Directional Shift IoR Book 1
Chapter 3 - Death Leg Technique IoR Book 1 Chapter 4 - Genetic
Medicine IoR Book 1 Chapter 5 - Jiang Xue

IoR Book 1 Chapter 6 - Snowy Night

IoR Book 1 Chapter 7 Pt. 1 – Essence Cleansing Dan IoR Book 1 Chapter
7 Pt. 2 – Essence Cleansing Dan IoR Book 1 Chapter 8 Pt. 1 - Rebirth

IoR Book 1 Chapter 8 Pt. 2 – Rebirth

IoR Book 1 Chapter 9 Pt. 1 – To Advance by Leaps and Bound IoR Book 1
Chapter 9 Pt. 2 – To Advance by Leaps and Bound IoR Book 1 Chapter 10
Pt. 1 - Exam

IoR Book 1 Chapter 10 Pt. 2 - Exam

IoR Book 1 Chapter 11 Pt. 1 - Diamond Ring IoR Book 1 Chapter 11 Pt. 2
- Diamond Ring IoR Book 1 Chapter 12 - Depression

IoR Book 1 Chapter 13 Pt. 1 - Righteousness IoR Book 1 Chapter 13 Pt. 2
- Righteousness IoR Book 1 Chapter 14 Pt. 1 - Overlord Xiang Yu IoR Book
1 Chapter 14 Pt. 2 - Overlord Xiang Yu IoR Book 1 Chapter 15 Pt. 1 -
Transformation IoR Book 1 Chapter 15 Pt. 2 - Transformation IoR Book 1
Chapter 16 Pt. 1 - B1 Gene Medicine IoR Book 1 Chapter 16 Pt. 2 - B1
Gene Medicine IoR Book 1 Chapter 17 Pt. 1 - Xiantian IoR Book 1 Chapter
17 Pt. 2 - Xiantian IoR Book 1 Chapter 18 Pt. 1 - Dark Battle IoR Book 1
Chapter 18 Pt. 2 - Dark Battle IoR Book 1 Chapter 19 Pt. 1 - Supreme
Expert IoR Book 1 Chapter 19 Pt. 2 - Supreme Expert IoR Book 1 Chapter

20 Pt. 1 - A Small Splash in a Large World IoR Book 1 Chapter 20 Pt. 2 - A Small Splash in a Large World

Book 2 – Bullet

IoR Book 2 Chapter 1 Pt. 1 - Underground Boxing Arena

Inch of Radiance Book 1 Chapter 1 – Heavenly Net

September 18, 2013 [22:15] – Night in Shanghai suburbs.

Shanghai attracts a lot of people at night as usual, similar to a beauty shrouded in mystery. It makes you want to come closer, to expose and remove her mysterious veil! However, this is the outskirts of the city, a lot more peaceful compared to the central parts.

A white figure was gliding above the sidewalk; this was a young man around twenty years old. His appearance could be considered fairly handsome. His long lazy hair, which randomly fluctuated about at his shoulders, was a slightly deviant from the current fashion styles. However to girls, this actually had an indescribable attraction effect. His most distinguishing features were his bright and clear eyes, eyes that seemed to reflect the heavenly stars.

A beautiful girl wearing a red vest distractedly stared at the youth that just walked past her, and couldn't help but feel attracted.

The youth glanced at the girl, the corner of his mouth letting out a sliver of a helpless smile. "Looks like even entering the [Three Great Heavenly Realms] first level — 'Joyous Spirit realm' is not a "ten point" easygoing event! However..." The youth's face actually eluded a small grin, revealing the right hand that was hidden in his pocket, a very attractive hand (TL: Is this actually shoujo?....). In the middle of the night, his right hand unintentionally revealed a faint, bizarre circulating radiance. A string of ice cold blade energy flashed through his fingers...

[Three Great Heavenly Realms] was actually an ancient secret that his

father—whom had has never met face to face—left for him. Inside, there were no internal practice formulas, only that mystical flying dagger technique. Flying dagger techniques were only basic skills; the [Three Great Heavenly Realms]’s main purpose was to cultivate the mind. Once the flying dagger techniques were completely grasped and the mind reformed, you would naturally be able to attain the first level.

[Three Great Heavenly Realms]’s first level realm was indeed ‘Joyous Spirit Realm’. The youth had recently reached this level! Written at the end of this book of secrets was the book’s author — Li Xun Huan.

The youth had only known that in ancient history there was a martial arts master called Li Xun Huan, and didn’t really know what other areas of talents this man had. Unexpectedly within 100 years, he was able to reach such a level with the flying dagger. Using the flying dagger, he could take off into the air, and into the clear sky! This [Three Great Heavenly Realms] was really Li Xun Huan’s most basic secret refining technique....

While walking, the youth arrived outside of a villa.

This was a type of villa that was common around this area, and in this serene and quiet area of the suburbs, although the number of villas did not exceed a thousand, it was at least eight hundred. The youth casually took out a set of keys, unlocked the door, and directly walked in.

At this time, the several girls who walked past the outside of the villa saw the handsome youth. Amongst them, a girl in pink clothes said without blinking, “Wow, so handsome... This villa must have exceeded ten million! I have decided; I have to find a man like him in the future!”

However, they also knew that this type of event could only happen in their dreams. After all, there were countless girls who would dress themselves up for the sake of catching a wealthy husband, hoping for the day that they would be able to become like Cinderella.

In a place like Shanghai, the amount of people owning villas wasn't small, however, these luxurious villas still ranged from a few million to ten million. By owning a villa like this, they could be considered wealthy and respectable. From a different perspective, this villa could represent the youth's wealth and status.

Walking into the villa, the villa did not appear to be different from the neighboring villas at all. On the outside, it really looked like any other luxurious villa. The youth upon entering the villa, headed straight for the restroom.

Within the bathroom, the youth revealed a card and directly inserted it into secret slot behind the mirror. The hidden slot suddenly emitted a light, and a red colored beam of light shot out. The youth stepped forwards, letting the red beam rest on his eyes.

"Iris identity confirmed! Welcome, young master Li Yang!" sounded an electronic voice. The bathtub immediately rose two meters, exposing a hidden passage.

This youth was actually Li Yang.

Li Yang, male, 24 years of age. Two years ago, he had been specifically chosen amongst the elite group 'Dragon Fang' to enter the country's 'Security Bureau's 9th Division'! This was also first time in history that the

'Security Bureau's 9th Division' had recruited a member from the military. The most important reason for this was that Li Yang was in possession of the 'never missing' Flying Dagger technique!

Li Yang looked at the path in front of him and helplessly laughed. "They couldn't even choose a decent location... they just had to choose the bathroom. I wonder which 'intelligent' fellow made that decision." His figure spread out, and like a goose feather, he floated down the bathtub's passage.

This was actually an elevator. Along with Li Yang's descent, the elevator dropped straight down at high speeds. To a normal person, even if they could handle the psychological pressure of falling down at such a high speed, they would not be able to bear the physical pressure on the body.

Li Yan's expression however, did not change. In fact, it was still the same tranquil expression with a slight smile turning up the corners of his lips.

"Ding!" The elevator door opened with a clear sound, and Li Yang walked out of the elevator.

This secret base of operations was located about 50 meters below ground level. The villa was Li Yang's living accommodations, and it was also one of the thousand villas connected in the area. This was currently the living quarters of the Shanghai 'Security Agency Group 9' members.

As soon as one entered the area, any ordinary person would be attracted to the various elaborate decorations on the ceiling. The entire upper portion of the training area was modelled to be like a heavenly star-filled sky. It was built completely on advanced illusionary technology,

giving the wonderful sense of floating in space.

Those bright twinkling stars hanging above emulated every aspect of the 'Heavenly Sky', which made it a possess a realistic quality.

This base was indeed the 'Security Bureau's 9th division' Shanghai branch — Heavenly Net.

Just as Li Yang was about 50 meters away, a man laughed in his direction. "Li Yang you brat, you finally came. I just got tested, and I have just passed the 200-300 crystals stage. Haha....Li Yang, don't you envy me!"

"Shuuu!"

With a quick flash of a knife, the male was shocked motionless. He slowly rubbed his lower body, suddenly cried out with grief, "Li Yang, you bastard, you really dare to do such a thing. So close...a bit closer and I, Tian Lin, would have lost his precious life because of you! You're really going too far, way too far..."

Li Yang actually did not mind. He laughed and replied: "Look at you being arrogant; even though my strength is still only that of around eighty crystals, you should know that with a flying dagger in my hand, defeating a brat like you is no problem. Alright, I'm not going to chat with you anymore; I need to go practice!"

Tian Lin also laughed. All the members of Shanghai's base of operations 'Security Bureau's 9th Division' had admiration towards Li Yang. This was

because Li Yang was one of select few that had actually been specifically selected from outside of the group, while Tian Lin and the others had been specifically trained since they were young.

"That blockhead Hei Yan is still in the training area. Boss Sister Yan is in the base of operations, but she is undeniably in the testing area. The 5 brothers of the Tan family are also testing their own strengths right now. Whatever, I've already trained for 6 hours today so I'll leave first. Haha....the wonderful nightlife is awaiting me. Hehe, why am I saying this to a nobleman like you...humph..." Tian Lian snorted, and left.

Li Yang laughed bitterly, shook his head, and took out a cell phone. The cell phone's wallpaper background was that of a beautiful girl. Looking at it, Li Yang smiled. A hint of sadness flashed deep within his gaze, but it disappeared quickly. Li Yang entered his personal changing room and changed into training clothes. He lightly kissed his cellphone and placed it in the cabinet.

"Xue, wait for me!" Li Yang muttered to himself. He fiercely shook his head, a brilliant smile returning to his face, and entered the training area.

Book 1 Chapter 2 – Flying Dagger’s Directional Shift

“Hah! Hah!” Upon entering the training area, Li Yang had a blossoming smile on his face. Hearing the sound of shouting, Li Yang turned around and headed for the training area.

Glancing over the electronically lit “4” above the training area, Li Yang said while laughing, “Hei Yan, you little brat, you are actually trying your hardest. Still practicing continuously under 4x gravity, most likely the first person to break through into ‘Security Bureau’s 11th division’ will be you!”

This type of gravity-based training was from China’s Han Dynasty. With a height nearing two meters and flexing his muscles, hearing Li Yang’s voice, there was a “PENG!” sound. He lowered the enormous stone pillar from his arms and turning towards Li Yang who was outside of the room, with a huge smile said with a humming sound, “Li Yang, you little punk, you don’t need to deliberately show off. Your “Flying Dagger Techniques” is something that even the ‘Security Bureau’s 11th division’ experts cannot look down upon. Mostly likely during this year’s recruitment examination, you would without doubt enter the ‘Security Bureau’s 11th division’! Sigh, I really cannot figure it out. I, Hei Yan for better or for worse have been in the ‘Security Bureau’s 9th division’ for nine years. You’ve just arrived for two years, but I, Hei Yan, who have been working painstakingly hard, cannot climb up to you!” Hei Yan sighed and appeared slightly degraded.

Li Yang could not help but smile and said, “Hei Yan, greedy bastard, you still aren’t satisfied! Your inner cultivation has been ongoing for more than ten years already while I only have two so far! Also, due to the fact that within my period of cultivation I missed out on my most optimal years, my meridians have already finalized, making it impossibly difficult

to break through. If I tried to stay in this room that has a gravity four times stronger than normal, most likely I won't even last a single minute. How could I possibly be like you, who is "lively like a dragon or animated tiger" in this four times gravity?

Arriving at this point, Li Yang let out a sigh as well. Only at twenty two did he began to start his cultivation, making it almost impossible to even improve a little bit. After all, his meridians have already been finalized. Wanting to expand them was extremely difficult unless there was some random Xiantian expert forcefully using up their own spiritual reserves to help open up his meridians.

Hei Yan abruptly gazed at Li Yang, his heart simply in admiration. Li Yang was the only individual recruited from the Special Forces in the entire 'Security Bureau's 9th division', and all the rest of the guys indeed started cultivating when they were still young. Of course the reason that Li Yang was able to make it here, besides his personal skill being at a high level, was that he possessed that shocking "Flying Dagger Technique"! From what Hei Yan has seen so far, Li Yang was able to change the flight of his attack in an instant, hitting the opponent with an accuracy that way higher than any sharpshooter by a lot margin!

The flying dagger can change! The flying dagger can suddenly shift directions!

This kind of incredible skill, was something Hei Yan had never in his past heard of before!

A flying dagger suddenly changing directions, if their cultivation levels were not too far apart, then it would definitely be an instant kill! Think about it like this: when an expert manages to avoid the attack and

decides to relax a bit, when the knife gets close it suddenly changes direction! This was definitely a flying blade from hell!

Li Yang was originally specially recruited from the outside and did not cultivate internally from a young age. Because of this his meridians have already finalized. Improving his internal strength was practically impossible!

Hei Yan thought about his relationship with Li Yang, his heart felt a burst of brotherhood emotions. Suddenly looking at Li Yang, he firmly said, "Li Yang, you young brat, don't worry. My 'Six Pure Yang' technique right now has reached the third layer. The distance from Xiantian realm's fourth layer is merely a step or so away. As long as I, Hei Yan, can reach the Xiantian realm, I promise to open up your meridians!"

Li Yang's heart was slightly touched, however he knew that once Hei Yan broke through to the Xiantian realm, he would immediately become a member of the 'Security Bureau's 11th division' as well as become a national defender. When the time came, even if Hei Yan wanted to exhaust his own inner energy to help him, Li Yang still would not allow Hei Yan to do so, since helping someone else open their meridians caused one to ruin their own constitution.

"Thanks, really, but as long as I have my "Flying Dagger" techniques I won't necessarily need any large amounts of internal energy. Its fine, I need to go practice as well. Hei Yan, you continue what you were doing!" Li Yang with a smile, entered an empty training area.

Double the gravitational intensity! Li Yang walked into the training area.

Li Yang stood peacefully within the training area, eyes closed, motionless. Twice the gravity for him who has stayed in this elite force for the past two years was simply nothing, let alone cultivating his internal strength!

Even though Li Yang's innate talent was extremely good, due to his meridians being finalized even if he used tens of years of time, at most he would arrive at the second layer of cultivation.

But now, Li Yang alone painstakingly in two years had reached the 'Six Pure Yang' technique's first layer. This was already very impressive, and from this alone one could see his personal aptitude. Xing Luo, the base of operations group leader, once said "If that little brat Li Yang started cultivating from a young age, he definitely could have reached the Xiantian realm within a decade!"

Although he couldn't cultivate his inner strength that well, his limited first layer's internal energy had actually increased his abilities by a large amount. In fact even if the gravitational force was increased to three fold, he would still be able to move about. However he still needed to cultivate more, practice real combat!

Li Yang suddenly smiled brilliantly.

"Since I cannot achieve great success cultivating internally, then I have to use a hundred percent of my current strength. Practicing combat technique is the best solution right now!" Li Yang slowly closed his eyes, his mind completely in an ethereal state. Instantly his mind formed an image; two valiant experts were currently fighting on the verge of life and death.

One was a large darker man approximately two meters tall with an extremely muscular body. As if he was a rock, with his extraordinarily muscular legs, he was so tough it was frightening. The large black man's legs were like iron clamps. Every time he lowered one of them, the air around it would create "hu hu" sounds, causing his opponent to take a few steps back.

His opponent was a slightly shorter but just as muscular large white man. This white individual however, was very cunning and was not reckless. He was very flexible, with just some movements of his legs they seemed like the wind, floating and drifting everywhere.

However.....

"HONG!"

Like an exploding watermelon, a single kick from one of the large black man's legs caused the white man's brains to burst, dying on the spot!

If this scene was displayed to the public, a number of wealthy Americans would definitely exclaim, "Wasn't this scene from New York's recent secret underground 'Demon Fights'?

As the images within Li Yang's mind suddenly disappears, the image that replaced that was the tank-like black man. Once again the two legs similar to a fox roaming about, the attacks neverending, was played on repeat. Every action, every change was slowly being broadcasted. Finally all those actions and changes, especially that deadly last kick, were all analyzed by Li Yang. The large black man, also known as "Demon King",

had his unique skill 'Fatal Inclined Kick' broken down and analyzed.

The truth was, through computer technology it was possible to get a clear analysis of the unique skill that the "Demon King" used. However, getting an actual understanding of this unique skill was a different story. After all, that speed was really too fast!

Li Yang's eyes that were previously closed suddenly opened.

"Hah!" Li Yang shouted. His figure flashed, his two legs like lightning blurred across the room, the strength causing the air around him to make "hu hu" sounds. At this time Li Yang's two legs actually left two blurry after images.

Abruptly, Li Yang's right leg seemed like it would break through the heavens and the earth, from that blur suddenly piercing out! His right leg stopped, but the wind that it carried roared, the after images from his legs disappearing.

"Mmm, after watching sixteen different recordings, watching these "Demon Fights" still had the best results. Using half a year's time, I finally grasped the essence of this sideways kick! Not bad, this is worthy of being a warrior's fatal killing move, no wonder this kick is so powerful!" Li Yang suddenly smiled.

Li Yang smiled with satisfaction, walking out from the training area and into the testing area.

Book 1, Chapter 3 – Death Leg Technique

Li Yang's Flying Dagger techniques could be considered something that is tied with the world's underground scene. Whether it was the underground's assassin organizations or the terrorist organizations, "Li Flying Dagger" was definitely an infamous name that drew intimidation.

After joining the Security Bureau's 9th division, Li Yang has already carried out 13 missions. Nine of those missions were ordinary class, three of those were C-rank. There was still one more mission that he did, which was actually an A-rank mission! Within the Security Bureau's 9th division he was the only member in history to successfully carry out an A-rank mission.

The Security Bureau divided missions into ordinary and special level mission. These special level missions differed in that the enemies in those missions all had extraordinary and unusual skills. Depending on the strength of the enemy, the mission in accordance divided into several levels as well!

The result of Li Yang successfully carrying out that A-rank mission was also the true reason for why his reputation was spreading out internationally.

That mission was to precisely sneak into one of China's top three assassination organizations and secretly kill the Japanese 'Dual Flowers' Gold Floral Rank ninja. That Golden Floral Rank is the equivalent of a Xiantian level ninja. Ninjas are the hardest to capture, and one of the Xiantian level was definitely terrifying to even think about capturing, but in the end even that ninja ended up with a dagger stuck in his throat!

The underground world up until now, whether it be the assassination, terrorist or any other criminal organizations all recognized that the Security Bureau had a top level expert — Li Flying Dagger!

No one knew for sure how high the skill of this 'Li Flying Dagger' was or what his real name was. All of those underground organizations also reluctantly knew that his flying dagger was a mystical technique that originated from ancient China, the 'never missing' Li Flying Dagger!

Only the 'never missing' Li Flying Dagger's military glory could allow these few big powers to become so fearful

Who would expect that the 'Li Flying Dagger' was only someone who recently started to develop chi, and was one of the lowest level youths.

If one's cultivation level was so low and yet have such a widespread reputation, then what if his rate of cultivation was improved in the future?

—

Li Yang already missed out on the best time period for internal cultivation, his meridians had already finalized. Because of this, Li Yang had already decided early on to improve his physical capabilities to increase his overall strength.

'Dragon Fang' military special forces is the elite group within China's special forces, and its members' combat abilities were of course first class. Li Yang was considered one of the best within that group, however

he was not yet satisfied with his combat skills, and felt that it was not nearly enough.

Li Yang still remembered that time when his Security Bureau's 9th division was stationed at the small Shanghai squadron, and the conversation he had with the Tan family five brother's Boss Tan Jin.

"Eldest brother Tan, which combat skills do you think is the strongest and which have the best assassination ability?" Li Yang inquired in front of Tan Jin.

When Tan Jin heard this, he immediately became serious. "The strongest? The highest assassination potential? Only within life and death, for the sake of preserving our lives can we bring out the potential to improve. Those types of combat skills are the ones that could be considered the most powerful. Only skills developed through life and death struggles can be considered real combat skills! These skills are at the same time the most lethal."

Hearing this, Li Yang's eyes suddenly lit up; he too thought that what Tan Jin said made sense.

Tan Jin glanced at Li Yang's divine look, smiled and said, "Underground boxing. Indeed underground boxing is where the life and death fights take place. Before entering the fighting arena, these boxers are under crazy pressure, and are challenged again and again to their physical limits. Using their legs to kick wooden structures that are similar to stone pillars. Doing squats over and over again under the weight of hundreds of kilograms as well. If they didn't reach the requirements then they were brutally punished or even killed. The mortality rate of these individuals reached about fifty percent.

"Li Yang, did you know? When these fighters enter the underground fighting ring, they are living out their materialistic lives, however the chances of them dying only increases. Within the fighting arena, if you didn't die then I did. An underground boxing match's mortality rate was actually as high as 70 percent. To leave the underground alive and healthy, an individual like this might not even appear once every three years! Under this type of environment, the combat techniques produced were definitely used to kill the opponent in order to preserve your own life! As for the power of the attack, it was without a doubt horrifying, as well as having the highest killing power!"

Hearing this, Li Yang felt his blood boiling, with a mortality rate as high as 70 percent, these types of fighting prowess made even those thinking about it excited. These were the real killing combat skills!

From that same day, Li Yang began to study the underground boxing's 'Death Leg Technique' combat skills.

Li Yang entered the testing area and saw five brothers along with the quiet boss Yan Jie.

Within the group there was another individual with a similar build as Hei Yan, his right leg suddenly released a flying kick, the air around his leg appeared to have compressed, making a whistling sound. His right leg actually producing blurry images. There was a "HONG" sound and the materials within the sandbag exploded out.

"Brother Tan, how high did the results of the energy test reach?" Li Yang said to the individual with a smile.

That Tan Jin turned around towards Li Yang and said, "Haha, the test was just finished, it was not bad. It finally broke through 500 crystals! Okay, Li Yang, come take the test, see how high your internal cultivation has reached. "Eldest brother is not bad huh, actually breaking through to 500 crystals, he really is strong. Oh, that's right you were talking about the underground boxing, heng, how can that even compare to our magnificent Chinese martial practices? I advise you brother to quickly abandon all of those 'Death Leg Techniques' and diligently cultivate our Tan family's leg techniques; those are the real fundamentals! An individual with fully dyed red hair, who one could tell with a glance that he was a disrespectful youth that gave people headaches, spoke with an arrogant attitude. This was Tan Huo, fourth of the five brothers.

"Huo, what you said is incorrect, you definitely would not think that the underground boxing combat skills is simple if you fought with their best in a life and death struggle. If your internal energy levels are similar, haha, I estimate that you won't even be able to take a single hit," said Tan family five brothers' third brother while laughing, with both legs kicking in the air, they mercilessly swept over the sandbags.

The brainless individual on the side replied to Tan Shui saying, "Third brother, I have already studied Chinese martial arts for a long, long time. I think it is best for you and eldest brother to forget give up those underground boxing techniques and properly learn our Tan family's leg techniques. Our family's Chain Leg Energy is matchless and profound, with just a bit of cultivation and you could enter the 'Security Bureau's 11th division'! Eldest brother, third brother, have any of you reached Chain Leg Energy's third layer?" This was coming from Tan Mu, Tan family five brother's second brother.

Tan Jin replied, "Second bro, our Tan family's leg techniques may be profound and matchless, but the Chain Leg Energy is dependent upon internal energy. Because of this, practicing the Chain Leg Energy and the underground leg techniques together does not cause much conflict. What's more, my energy results from the test was the highest, which means my method brings results, haha..."

Tan Jin was the eldest of the five brothers. Tan Shui was the third of the five brothers. These two individuals both felt that the underground techniques were worth learning.

Tan Mu was precisely that foolish male, the second brother of Tan family's five brothers. The red haired delinquent was Tan Huo, the fourth brother. These two firmly believed that learning the Tan family's techniques was best!

As for Tan family fifth brother Tan Tu, he was extremely indecisive. No matter what you asked him, he always replied "whatever", "about the same", or "not much of a difference"! This was why he was the only member of the five brothers who was not taking a side!

The Tan family was also known as the 'Five Type Brothers', because their names reflected gold, wood, water, fire and earth. Their parents most likely got lazy and gave them all simple names, however they were easy to remember!

A reserved woman who was on the side, dressed completely in red, abruptly opened her eyes, looked at Tan Jin who was boasting about his strength and said in disdain, "Tan Jin, is your 500 crystals really that high?

Within our base both Hei Yan and I have higher energy values! If we were to talk about real attack power, Li Yang is definitely the strongest."

Tan Jin could only laugh bitterly, this Yan Jie was the Boss sister of their base. She was extremely powerful, and always put down people like Tan family five brothers! As for Li Yan and Hei Yan, she had an entirely different attitude!

Hei Yan was the one with the highest energy cultivation, already reaching 800 something crystals. As long as he worked a bit harder then he would be able to break through the Houtian stage. Upon reaching the Xiantian stage, he would become an expert within the 'Security Bureau 11th division.'

As for Li Yang, he was definitely the one with the strongest attack power within the members of the base.

Although his energy level was only around 80 crystals, his impeccable Flying Dagger was beyond comprehension. Even if Hei Yan personally attacked, he was not a match for Li Yang's Flying Dagger techniques. After all, he had not reached a level where he became immune to bullets and blades. In addition, Li Yang's flying contained qi, making it a lot stronger than a bullet.

Moreover Li Yang's Flying Dagger could shift directions mid-flight, just thinking about it was frightening.

If you take out Li Yang and Hei Yan, then there was only Yan Jie left. Although Yan Jie was female, she still reached the third layer of the 'six pure yang' as well as reaching 600 crystals. She really a head above the

Tan brothers.

"With so many people here, as the head of this group I have to remind you that the exam date for entering the Security Bureau's 11th division is already set." Security Bureau's 9th Division captain Meng Tian said while laughing.

Everyone at once began to look at their group captain Meng Tian.

Every person here wanted to enter Security Bureau 11th Division because once you entered, not only did you become your country's guardian but it also meant that they could finally get married. Only after entering the Security Bureau 11th Division could they finally lead ordinary lives.

This was because the Security Bureau's 11th division was similar to an assassination group. It did not require them to work often, their members only going into action once a year. Because of this, they could live like ordinary people.

As for taking care of things outside of terrorist activities or some other big things, only members from the 9th Division were sent out. Only when these members could not resolve the issue would the 11th division be sent out.

The Security Bureau's 9th division did missions of all ranks. On top of that, it was required for each of them to practice for at least 6 hours every

day. Due to constantly practicing and doing missions, for the sake of protecting the confidentiality of the 9th division members, they had to implement the rule that forbade marriage. It goes without saying that everyone in the Security Bureau 9th Division knew this prior to entering this group.

Back then Li Yang did not have any objections towards this rule either, since his previous group Dragon Fang also forbade marriage. In Dragon Fang only after you became a veteran could you have a spouse.

However, after joining the Security Bureau's 9th Division he had met Jiang Xue. She was a girl who moved his heart and was a girl who he pledged his undying love to.

Because of this, Li Yang's current ambition was to enter the Security Bureau's 11th Division, afterwards living together with Jiang Xue. However because of the strict rules of the Security Bureau's 9th division, it was impossible for him to be together with Jian Xue. He could only talk through the phone while hiding his identity.

"Xue, wait for me, I will pass the examination this time for sure!" Li Yang said quietly within his heart.

Meng Tian looked at the crowd and spoke. "Headquarters sent out two members from the Security Bureau's 11th division, together with me that makes three. The examination will begin on the 20th at eight in the morning, there is only a month left so everyone needs to continue working hard!"

"Yes sir!" All the members had fire in their eyes. Tan family's five

brothers and Yan Jie were a bit different from Li Yang since they were raised here since they were young. The Security Bureau's 11th division has been their goal for a long time, and it wasn't difficult to imagine their attitudes currently.

All of them took a deep breath, each one of them with a serious expression.

Book 1 Chapter 4 – Genetic Medicine

Ever since the everyone heard the news that there was a month left before the assessment, they all began to train like crazy.

Training, training like a madman!

Tian Lin did not waste time by going out at night and the Tan family's five brothers did not have as much time to argue. Every individual's practice time exceeded twelve hours.

However Li Yang was the same as before, without a single change. If there was any change at all, then it would simply be that he was bit more focused on his current task, his training time did not actually change. In the past he cultivated for fifteen hours a day and he was currently simply continuing that pace.

Li Yang woke up at four in the morning everyday, absorbing the heavenly lingqi internally until six. Afterwards, he would run, eat, etc.

He starts his exercises at seven in the morning, focusing primarily on wrist and leg strength, challenging his limits non-stop. There were many different methods, such as horizontally gripping a 100 jin steel bar. The wrists must completely bear that heavy force, afterwards jumping up and down vertically. He practiced this all the way until 9am. By this time, Li Yang's hands become sore and his legs numb with practically no energy left.

However, precisely at this time is when Li Yang practices his Flying

Dagger Technique, casting it non stop. In addition, he had to instill internal energy each time on the blade and make every dagger pass through a steel plate. Not only did he place these strict restrictions on himself, he place a small bullseye, and only by passing through that did he deem his practice successful. Only after sending out 3000 successful attempts does Li Yang allow himself to eat lunch.

Every blade had to be infused with internal energy, as well as pass through the red bullseye on a steel plate, the conditions were indeed harsh. Li Yang only had his pathetic bit of energy from his recently acquired first layer level of internal cultivation, only enough to fire ten blades. Three thousand blades was only attained by continually breaking through his own limits!

Sending out the 3000 blades, spending time to recover lost internal energy, as well as the times that were actually successful, consisted of a really long period of time. By the time he was finished, it was already evening. After practicing this way for a whole year, Li Yang's 3000 blades practice currently ended around noon.

This trained Li Yang, since even though his internal energy was low, but his recovery time was fast! In order to supply the internal energy needed to fire off three thousand blades within three hours, you can imagine how quickly the recovery rate needs to be.

During the afternoon, he sat cross-legged and meditated, cultivating internally from 1pm until 3pm.

After cultivating internally, Li Yang begins his combat training from 3pm until 9pm, a total of six hours!

He rested and ate dinner until 9:30pm, which is around the time he conversed with Jiang Xue on the phone. This half hour was Li Yang's happiest period of time every day.

After 10pm is when Li Yang takes a stroll around the neighborhood. He then goes to the base and cultivates a bit or talks a bit with the other members, afterwards sleeping at precisely midnight.

His daily cultivation time was no less than 15 hours! This was what allowed Li Yang's capabilities to rapidly increase. When he first entered the Security Bureau's 9th Division, his energy tested no more than 12 crystals, barely making double digits. He could barely be called a second-level expert. In just two years, he already reached 80 crystals, increasing his strength five to six times!

In this manner, Li Yang cultivated non-stop.

All of the world's major powers have similar methods of classifying experts.

Your crystal energy level was precisely your level as an expert! Take Li Yang's current 80 crystals for example, 80 was double digits meaning he was a second-level expert.

But with this said, the same level expert could differ quite a bit in strength. For example, although a 1000 crystals individual and a 9000

crystals individual were both similarly fourth level experts, the difference in energy between the two was way too much.

The 'Six Pure Yang' was a cultivation practice widely used within the Security Bureau, all of them cultivating this 'Six Pure Yang'. This was also another reason for why the female ratio was so low within the Security Bureau, the amount of females able to cultivate Pure Yang was too few.

This 'Six Pure Yang' has a total of six layers. If an individual only cultivated internally and did not vigorously exercise then when he reaches the first layer he would be a first-level expert. Reaching the second layer would make the individual a second-level expert, and upon attaining the sixth layer one would become a sixth-level expert.

In the beginning or early days of training, exercising can actually increase one's energy level by quite a bit. One's power after going through vigorous cultivation could attain a crystal energy level of the double digits.

Because of this, although Li Yang's cultivation has only barely breached the first layer, because he exercised vigorously, he could attain roughly 80 crystals of energy.

But as your skill level become higher, training begins to drop dramatically in effectiveness. For example, a third-level expert with couple hundred crystals of power really does not get that much stronger even if their crystal energy improves by a couple dozen.

There is even less of a need to talk about fourth-level experts and above. To a top notch expert who had over 10,000 or even 100,000

crystals, was there any purpose in gaining only a couple dozen crystals?

Li Yang was approximately 180 centimeters with a standard figure. He appeared to weigh around 170 jin, but if he stepped on a weight it would reveal that he was already 200 jin. If he took off his clothes, it would be revealed that Li Yang's body was built almost entirely of muscles. The muscles however were streamlined, not at all like those shown off by bodybuilders.

Security Bureau 9th Division Shanghai Base — Within Heavenly Net's training room.

Under two times gravity, Li Yang was currently sparring with Tan Jin. Of course, Tan Jin didn't use his internal energy and only used his combat skills to spar with Li Yang.

The two men were naked from the waist up, wearing long black pants for the lower half. Although the two individual's upper bodies did not have extremely bulky muscles, they made people feel that these muscles were extremely powerful.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Their legs clashing, creating noise non-stop, upper bodies sweating profusely.

Hong! The two individuals fiercely kicked out with the same technique, hitting their legs together, the two men were both forced back a bit after the exchange.

"Li Yang, not bad, you can even fight with me to a draw. Even though I

was the one that introduced you to the Underground Foot Techniques, I never would have thought that you would catch up with me so quickly. Ai, your cultivation does not make your muscles bulky like body builders. I, Tan Jin, still cannot defeat you, the Security Bureau 9th Division's hottest guy!" Tan Jin shook his head and sighed, appearing depressed on the outside.

"Ho, back then your purpose for telling me to gain muscle was for me to be fat like a gorilla, I hope your heart gets punished!" Li Yang laughed and scolded. "However, those strong and handsome individuals are really just impressive looking but useless! Take Hei Yan for example, although his cultivation energy is the highest within our group, his muscles are developed but not too prominent."

Tan Jin nodded his head in agreement and said, "A real expert would never allow his muscles to bulge that much! If your muscles are too bulky, it limits your movements and slows down your reflexes. Speed is extremely important in combat, and even within the top underground boxers, while they are muscular none of them have muscles like bodybuilders. Those underground fighters not only have fast speed, but amazing attack power as well! The weirdest part of it all is that their body sizes are all rather big!"

Li Yang however began to smile. "I don't find this strange at all. Don't tell me you don't know how miserable the underground training regimen is? Going through this type of training is like asking for death, many of these combatant can reach 100 crystals simply through this physical training! The highest was known to have reached even 500 crystals! If the fighters did not develop well, how could they handle that kind of cruel training? Because of this, of course they all need to be bigger in body size!"

Li Yang abruptly began to ridicule himself. "500 hundred crystals huh, I really cannot comprehend their training methods. We cannot be considered to be someone who does not work hard, but we only have a couple dozens crystals of energy. Just thinking about their training process scares me."

Tan Jin nodded his head as well. "Yeah, those fighter climb out from that pile of the dead, however to reach the underground fighting arena, there is still one more barrier! Almost half the fighters end up dying at this barrier. This barrier is precisely the 'A1' gene medicine, forcing the fighter to undergo a body transformation.

Li Yang replied, "I heard about this, roughly four years ago there was a genetics breakthrough and several major powers have started developing this A1 gene medicine. A1 was a gene that underwent transformations to improve its strength. However this A1 was not perfect, using it led to a death rate of roughly fifty percent! It is rumored that one package of A1 gene medicine is worth 5 hundred thousand dollars!"

Tan Jin laughed and said, "Indeed, and soon after A2 will come out as well, being more complete than A1 with a mortality rate of only 10 percent! It has a staggering price of 5 million dollars! Last year there was some news that America has successfully completed a perfect A3 that did not cause any death. As long as you used it, it had 100 percent success rate. However, the cost of making the A3 was high, resulting in a mind blowing price of five hundred million dollars! This made the A3 actually a hundred times more expensive than the A2. However, many unfathomably rich individuals still could afford it, it is rumored that it could provide health and vigor after taking it, at the very least allow you to live for several more decades.

A1, A2, A3 three types of genetic medicine, the higher the number the

better it's effects but more expensive as well. 'A3' gene medicine has already reached a price of 500 million dollars, if you were not ridiculously rich there was no way you could afford it.

"Hmm, currently the strongest experts of the underground fighting are all fourth-level experts. Originally they had a couple hundred crystals of energy, after using A1 and undergoing the transformation they will have at least a thousand crystals of energy. There were also many people who started off with roughly a hundred to two hundred crystals of power, after taking the A1 medicine would spike to just short of 800 crystals. However these people were still considered extremely fortunate, after all many died from taking this incomplete A1 drug!" Li Yang sighed, feeling regret for the strong cultivators who fell victim to the imperfect medicine.

Tan Jin nodded his head and said, "This topic is easy to understand, after all the head of the underground arenas are not going to spend that much on its fighters. After all the 'A2' was really too expensive, five million dollars, sigh... If a fighter did not do well in its fight, there was a high chance that this price would not be earned back. This 'A1' gene medicine was actually pushing the underground arena heads to the extreme. It still is best to practice internally after all, breaking through by your own was better than using the medicine by a large margin as it did not carry any risk.

Li Yang nodded his head in agreement.

However within Li Yang's heart was still a shred of sadness, "Alas, it's so unfortunate that it's too late already for me to cultivate internally as my meridians have already finalized. No matter how beneficial cultivating internally is, it has no effect on me."

Li Yang's heart abruptly hardened. "Those underground arena experts even without the help of the medicine still reached 500 crystals of energy, I don't believe that there's no way for me to attain this too! As long as I reach 500 crystals of energy, at that time I will have a much stronger wrist as well as internal energy, my flying dagger's strength will improve by at least two stages. When that time arrives, even a Xiantian Dacheng expert would not be able to handle my flying dagger!"

Li Yang suddenly came to a decision. He would continue to work hard cultivating and practicing his physical strength so that his flying dagger could reach an astonishing level.

Book 1 Chapter 5 – Jiang Xue

Within a large 'Heavenly Net' practice room.

Li Yang's eyes were sharp like arrows, staring straight at the red target resting 50 meters away on a steel plate.

Xiu!

Li Yang flicked his hand and a knife radiance flashed past. Like a meteor, before onlookers could process the reflex signal generated from their brain, the flying dagger was already embedded within that red target.

That plate was made out of steel, and unique steel no less. If an average person stood right next to the steel plate and tried to stab the dagger in, they would fail. This was why even if it was Li Yang, he had to instill internal energy. Every single one of Li Yang's flying daggers contained internal energy, and every single one of those daggers pierced into that red target.

Xiu! Xiu!

Li Yang's right and left hands both began to quiver, and two strands of icy blade luster flashed by. Li Yang squinted his eyes, a thread of refined awn flashed before his eyes.

Others could not see the trajectory of the knife, but Li Yang could tell that his two blades shot towards the two extremities of the steel plate. At

the last moment, the two knives suddenly changed directions, perfectly striking the red target.

Drip!

Sweat dripped in copious amounts from Li Yang's forehead, but Li Yang's face was calm and peaceful like that of a rock, continuously practicing all sorts of flying dagger cultivation techniques.

Ninety-nine percent of the 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' describes the proper procedures and usage of the flying dagger. As long as you were able to release a single flying dagger, you could shoot two of them as well. Of course, it was more beneficial to train both hands.

The 'Never Missing Li Flying Dagger'!

Only upon obtaining the 'Ghost Petrifying Flying Dagger Release' degree of expertise could you be considered to have reached a state of perfection. Only then could you be known as 'Never Missing'!

However, in order to reach that state, one must have finished cultivating in the three great boundaries – the 'Joyous Spirit Boundary', 'Remorse Boundary' and the 'Despair Boundary'! The last single percent of this 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' talks briefly about these three boundaries.

Every single one of these realms allowed the flying dagger to have a different type of special effect. Li Yang experienced great joy with Jiang Xue during their time together, which awakened the 'Joyous Spirit Realm'. His flying daggers were similar to a cheerful and lively bird; he could feel

the cheerfulness of his blade, and his spirit could feel the energy resonating within his blade. This was why his blade could shift mid-flight.

As for the higher level 'Remorse Boundary' and 'Despair Boundary' that brought about even more astonishing effects, it was not something that Li Yang could comprehend at the moment. Only upon reaching that level could he truly understand these boundaries.

Xiu!

Releasing another Flying Dagger, Li Yang's wrist slightly flicked, and the Flying Dagger flew along its predicted trajectory. However, Li Yang did indeed have that mysterious 'Joyous Spirit Boundary' feeling. Just by controlling the Flying Dagger a bit, the trajectory of the blade would at once shift a bit as well, once again striking right on the red target.

Li Yang walked towards the steel plate at once and removed his Flying Daggers from the thirty red targets. Thirty Flying Daggers was the limit Li Yang could carry on him before it began to influence his speed and attack power.

Continue practicing!

Li Yang immediately returned to his previous location 50 meters away, and continued practicing.

.....

At around 3pm, Li Yang finally ended his five hour training.

His expression today was actually quite odd, this was because there were seven daggers that actually missed the target! Even though he could change the blades mid-flight, there were still seven daggers that failed.

"I've finally successfully completed the task of 3500 Flying Daggers. It's 3pm already, three hours slower than in the past." Li Yang frowned.
"Tomorrow, tomorrow I need to succeed before 2:30pm."

Li Yang turned around and left to eat lunch.

Why did Li Yang's training take three hours longer than usual today?

Ever since he had that chat with Tan Jin yesterday, Li Yang felt a deep gap between his own skill level compared to those of the Underground Arena's fighters. Because of this, he felt that he needed to increase his training amount.

Today was the day that Li Yang decided to increase his training amount. In order to train his wrist and leg strength, he increased the steel bar's weight from 100 Jin to 120 Jin. Although it was merely 20 Jin, Li Yan did indeed feel the increased pressure. It's important to consider that Li Yang had been holding that steel bar horizontally for more than two hours, even though he utilized internal energy non-stop to ease the soreness of his muscles, being able to last that long was still quite impressive. Li Yang had already persisted through this for a year; a whole year of working to death before barely managing this feat. Currently, he even incorporated

frog jumps while lifting that 100 Jin bar.

Now, after adding twenty Jin, Li Yang once again began to feel the suffering he felt a year ago, but he still stuck it out to the end. However, adding jumps to his workout caused him to increase his training duration by an hour.

The next task was the Flying Dagger. The previous standard of 3000 Flying Daggers was changed 3500!

Just now, Li Yang did indeed release 3500 Flying Daggers, but due to his earlier wrist training, the pressure was indeed too much, causing some of his blades to fail. In addition, Li Yang constantly supplied internal energy to alleviate his wrist pain, which caused his internal energy to deplete.

Typically, Li Yang spent three hours cultivating his Flying Dagger, but because of the increased amount of blades as well as the issue with his wrists, he spent a total of five hours.

After finishing his meal, he began his internal cultivation and relaxed his body.

When he practiced his combat skills in the afternoon, he raised the gravity to 2.5x as well! Because his Flying Dagger and jumping exercises took up more time than expected, he only practiced combat techniques for three hours. However, three hours of training under 2.5x gravity was far more difficult than practicing for six hours under 2x gravity. When the training was completed, Li Yang was like a chicken in soup, his body covered in sweat.

However, no matter how much he perspired, Li Yang still silently executed his training.

No matter how much he had to suffer, Li Yang still persevered, and this was all for the sake of that gentle and kind girl. This was all for that one sentence, a sentence he had heard over 300 times!

9:30pm every night was Li Yang's most happy time of the day. This was because this half an hour was reserved for him and Jiang Xue.

At 9:30pm today, Li Yang was lying down on his bed with a phone in his hand.

"Xue, it's me, Mu Yi!" Li Yang had to follow the strict rules set up by the Security Bureau 9th Division. Even if it was the person he loved the most, he could not reveal his real name. He dropped his surname 'Yang' and told Jiang Xue that he was 'Mu Yi'.

"Oh it's you Yi gege. Today when I was at the hospital, an extremely adorable little girl came to see the doctor. She began wailing non-stop from getting her shots..." Jiang Xue delightfully shared her happiness with Li Yang.

Li Yang held his phone and listened, his face all smiles. He had a brilliant smile, and happily smiled continuously.

Jiang Xue appeared to be energetic and her words were extremely cheerful, but Li Yang knew that she was actually quiet and reserved. Only when she was talking with him would she act like a child.

At this very moment, inside of one of the Shanghai suburb's affordable housing, a gentle girl next to her bed held a phone in her hand. This was indeed Jiang Xue; Jiang Xue was extremely good natured and very quiet. Her flowing hair made her appear even more beautiful, and when she smiled, her eyes completely closed.

Jiang Xue knew that her beloved Yi gege was a member of the country's special division, and that she couldn't be together with him. However, she was willing to wait for him.

Seeing that Jiang Xue wasn't willing to give up on him no matter what, Li Yang gave Jiang Xue a hint. "Within two years, I will definitely marry you!" This made Jiang Xue's heart skip a beat, and the pages within her calendar was torn again and again.

Now a year had already passed. Li Yang originally wanted to keep his promise and believed that he would pass the exam and enter the Security Bureau 11th division. However, Li Yang feared that should he fail, he would disappoint Jiang Xue, and therefore requested two years. Because of this, Li Yang began to train like crazy.

"... Nn, Yi gege, is your training harsh?" After a long time, Jiang Xue finished talking about her day and asked with a trembling voice.

Li Yang immediately smiled and began to comfort her. "It's not too bad, not harsh, not harsh at all." Li Yang took a deep breath, took a moment before saying, "Xue, wait for me. Soon, very soon I will make you my wife!"

"Mmm, Yi gege, I will wait for you forever. No matter how long it takes, I will continue to wait for you" said Jiang Xue resolutely.

"It's already getting late, you should sleep since you still have work tomorrow. As a nurse you have to take care of the sick; if you sleep too late and end up with a bad condition that would be disastrous. Alright, alright, good night!" Li Yang gently said.

"Good night!" Jiang Xue obediently replied.

"Yi gege, I'm waiting for you!" After a long time, Jiang Xue said with deep love. Li Yang's heart was startled, and with a regretful expression hung up the phone. He knew that if he wasn't the one to hang up the phone, Jiang Xue would not be the one to hang up.

Li Yang was currently inside of his villa's bedroom.

Li Yang got up from his bed, and with a heavy sigh, looked up at the clock hanging on the wall. It was already 10:05pm.

Li Yang slowly walked out of his villa and closed the doors, slowly walking on the streets.

It was quite peaceful and quiet at 10pm. There were practically no one around this district around this time, the dusky street lights shined upon the road, making the road ahead seem unreal. Li Yang had his two hands in his pockets and strolling at a slow pace...

Suddenly, a gust of cold autumn wind blew by and Li Yang's body

shuddered and felt a slight shiver. He realized that it was now already late autumn.

"Yi gege, I'm waiting for you!" Within this year, every night this was always the last sentence during their calls. This simple sentence was what drove Li Yang to train every day for 15 hours with such force. This area was where Li Yang was sweet, as well as where he suffered.

To be in love with someone but unable to meet them and not even able to tell them their name, who could understand his pain?

"Xue..." Li Yang let out a heavy sigh, and tilted his head up to look at the silver moon. That ice cold silver radiance left a tremor in his heart. A chilly gust blew by, and Li Yang held on to his clothes a bit tighter. Slowly walking within the chilly gusts, the dusky street lamps' radiance seemed to be even dimmer than before. Li Yang's thoughts slowly drifted towards the past...

Book 1 Chapter 6 – Snowy Night

The first time he met Jiang Xue, it could be said to be similar to a hero saving a princess.

This happened during a snowy night two years ago. Heavy snowfall swirled in the air, and all of Shanghai wore a layer of silver coating. The only thing between the heavens and the earth was the color silver.

That day was the day that Li Yang initially got recruited into the Security Bureau 9th Division, the first day that he was assigned to the Shanghai branch! Tan family's five brothers as well as Tian Lin held a welcoming dinner for Li Yang. At around midnight, the Security Bureau members finally came out from within the restaurant. The restaurant was not far from their assigned district so they simply walked on foot.

The heavy snow drifted down like goose feathers and boundless amounts of snow blossoms scattered everywhere in the sky. Since it was currently around midnight, there were not many people roaming the streets. Li Yang was the most clear-headed out of everyone in that group, after all, everyone within the special division were drinking experts. To him, the amount of wine within the restaurant wasn't even a significant amount.

Li Yang suddenly noticed that there was a robbery in a nearby alleyway. At that time, the robbers had already armed themselves with knives. Li Yang immediately threw out a Flying Dagger, piercing through the robber's right hand, afterwards quickly rushing towards that direction. Picking up the assaulted victim, he later found out that the victim was a fragile and delicate girl.

"Thank you!" The girl looked at Li Yang and said with gratitude.

Li Yang called 110 at once, afterwards accompanying the girl and chatted with her. That time, he ended up taking the girl home.

When Li Yang decided to leave, he didn't notice that the girl stood at her doorway, watching Li Yang's back continuously. She waited until Li Yang disappeared from the end of the street for a long time before disappointingly returning inside her home.

That was also the same day that Li Yang met the girl named Jiang Xue.

Ever since that day, Li Yang could not stop thinking about her during his training. His mind would constantly hear Jiang Xue's voice, while he could only laugh mockingly at himself. He was a member of the country's Special Division; an honorable occupation. Since he gave his life to his country, how could he allow himself to think about these things?

At the same time, this young girl often thought about her knight in shining armor. Girls around Jiang Xue's age all loved to dream, Jiang Xue was currently also dreaming this beautiful dream.

The second time they met, Jiang Xue was the one that actually saved Li Yang's life!

That day it snowed as well, the time was around midnight.

That time he went out on a mission, and that mission's enemy was related to 'Dual Flowers', one of the world's top three assassination organizations. His target was an assassin from the Chrysanthemum subgroup that was at the Golden Flower rank.

There were two major assassination groups within 'Dual Flowers'. Cherry Flower group was for warriors, while the Chrysanthemum group was for ninjas! Within 'Dual Flowers', Copper Flower was for second rank experts, Silver Flower was for third rank experts, and Golden Flower was for fourth rank experts! This Golden Flower ninja was equivalent to a Xiantian expert. On top of all this, ninjas were extremely elusive, making them excruciatingly hard to defeat.

At that time, group captain Meng Tian was carrying out a mission involving a different dangerous lunatic, and so this mission was assigned to Li Yang who had the highest offensive power. Li Yang was the former elite member of the Special Forces' trump card 'Dragon Fang, causing him to be familiar in this field.

At that time, the Security Bureau also received the important information a bit too late and did not have the time to assign a different individual to this task. On top of this, Meng Tian was already on a different mission. Under these helpless conditions, Li Yang was given this dangerous mission.

"If I die for my country, then it is an honorable sacrifice!"

Li Yang immediately took on the mission. He had already prepared his mind for this sacrifice, and this mentality was something he held ever since he joined the Special Forces. For the sake of National Peace, there needed to be some people willing to sacrifice themselves in order to

ensure that everyone else could lead peaceful lives.

Barely midnight, Jiang Xue finally finished her night shift. To her complete surprise, she saw a battle that was beyond her comprehension...

That figure who disappeared with a dazzle...

That fleeting flash of blade radiance...

How many times did she think about her Knight in Shining Armor? With a tough and tenacious expression, a thread of blade radiance passed by, and blood blossomed everywhere.

The Golden Flower ranked ninja was killed, but Li Yang was fatally injured!

Li Yang was actually quite fortunate. That ninja had already reached the Golden Flower rank, which was roughly equivalent to a Xiantian expert. Li Yang should have died, but upon receiving a fatal wound, his mystical Flying Dagger skill succeeded. At the last moment, the trajectory of the blade suddenly changed directions. That Golden Flower ranked ninja could not react in time, and the blade directly piercing through his throat. Li Yang, however, was also in critical condition.

Jiang Xue at once went to Li Yang and carried out some simple first aid. If it was not for these simple life-saving measures, Li Yang would not have made it to the hospital.

When Jiang Xue arrived to help Li Yang, he was already slowly becoming unconscious. He could only hazily see the glowing radiant body of a beautiful angel at his side. That angel was extremely pretty, that radiance eluding from her body also made Li Yang feel warmth. Soon after, he fell into an unconscious state.

Li Yang's injury was severe, extremely severe. He underwent recovery within the hospital for an entire month, and then spent another two months in this way within his own villa.

"Yi gege, time to take your medication!"

"Yi gege, I'm going to tell you a joke. In the past, there was a small monk. One day, he decided to leave his mountain..."

...

The time he spent in the hospital was when Jiang Xue took care of him. Under meticulous care, Li Yang still remembered that beautiful angel from when he was unconscious. Although he wasn't exactly sure why, he began to develop feelings for Jiang Xue. Whenever he saw Jiang Xue, his Special Forces cold demeanor would disappear, and his heart would begin to beat faster. Sometimes when the two got a bit close, their ears would feel hot.

"Yi gege, I like you!" After seeing that battle Jiang Xue knew that Li Yang was not an ordinary person. When she realized that there was only a week left before Li Yang was to be discharged from the hospital, she could no longer suppress her feelings out of fear that she would never be able to see him again. She could not help but burst out like this.

Li Yang was startled, soon after shaking his head without emotion and said, "I am sorry!"

...

After that rejection, Jiang Xue did not mention what happened between them previously again. She fully devoted herself to the remaining amount of time she could spend with Li Yang, being even more meticulous and gentle with her care. She absolutely did not have the spoiled temper of a normal 20 year-old.

The day before Li Yang was about to be discharged, Li Yang was currently within his ward.

Jiang Xue's face was a bit pale and here eye were a bit swelling. Last night she had insomnia, and could not sleep.

"Yi gege, if I we cannot be together, then I would rather not marry and stay alone forever!" Jiang Xue said firmly. She was a gentle girl and rarely spoke out like this. This was the decision she came to after pondering a whole night. She decided to try her best one last time, since this was what her heart truly wanted.

Li Yang was shocked. He recalled that bright radiant angel from when he was unconscious, as well as all the things Jiang Xue has done for him over this month. He also remembered every small and simple thing she lovingly did for him.

Immediately, Li Yang felt a 'Peng' sound crack open the layer of ice covering his heart, similar to a shattering piece of glass...

"If you want to be together with me, then you need to be used to being in solitude." Li Yang calmly replied.

Jiang Xue was startled for a second, and immediately revealed a blossoming smile. With a sweet smile, she stated, "I understand that Yi gege has his own secrets, no matter how long it takes I will definitely wait!"

"Two years. If you can wait for me for two years, I will definitely marry you!" Li Yang said resolutely before turning around and leaving.

...

Sitting inside of a car provided by the Security Bureau, Li Yang opened Jiang Xue's parting gift. The present was a music box, which played music from folk legend lovers. Listening to this music, Li Yang still remembered Jiang Xue's words of farewell. "I believe that our feelings are like these folk legend lovers. Even life and death cannot separate us!"

Hearing these words revealed that Jiang Xue deep down, her heart still enjoyed dreaming.

Thinking about these words, he recalled Jiang Xue's expression, causing his heart to be in a state of unrest. However, Li Yang immediately began to smile. "Maybe it was simply something she said during the spur of the moment. Most likely, two years later Jiang Xue would have already found

another man. I already belong to the country, love is simply wishful thinking! That beautiful angel I saw before falling unconscious was simply a beautiful dream..."

Li Yang was wrong. Jiang Xue did was not making a rash decision and was serious. That half an hour over the phone everyday felt short for both of them.

With each phone call, Li Yang felt like he was getting increasingly stuck in a muddy swamp. He was already beginning to realize that he could not abandon Jiang Xue, however he could not leave the country either.

However the Security Bureau 11th Division was indeed an excellent opportunity! The members of the Security Bureau 11th Division all had spouses. If he entered the Security Bureau 11th Division, not only could he be together with Jiang Xue, he could serve his country at the same time.

Li Yang looked forward to the days where he could live together with Jiang Xue. At the same time, this caused him to await the assessment even more. "If my internal energy was a bit stronger, then wouldn't that bring more assurance? Sadly I began cultivating internally too late and my meridians have already stabilized!"

"Work harder, work harder! In the future I must practice harder. Even if I do enter the Security Bureau 11th Division and stay by Xue's side, I still need to carry out missions at least once a year. In addition, upon entering the Security Bureau 11th Division, the missions will all be important and difficult.

If I die during a mission, what will happen to Xue?

Only by studiously cultivating and increasing my strength could I live a longer life, survive missions, and stay together with Xue longer!"

Abruptly, Li Yang stopped near a street light.

"Meridians, stabilized meridians is the biggest obstacle preventing me from increasing my strength! If I started cultivating internal energy from a young age, then my Flying Dagger would be several times more powerful than right now. Meridians, meridians! So frustrating!" Li Yang's fist violently hit the pole of the street lamp, causing the pole to suddenly have a faint fist imprint.

Book 1 Chapter 7 (Pt. 1-2) – Essence Cleansing Dan

"Haha, Li Yang you brat, I knew that you would be outside taking a stroll around this time. Ah, the division captain was looking for you. He said that he had an important mission for you!" Tian Lin appeared in front of Li Yang, running towards Li Yang while laughing.

"Mission?" Li Yang paused for a moment, shortly afterwards firmly said to Tian Lin "Let's go."

After saying this, Li Yang quickly rushed towards their base.

.....

Within Heavenly Net's main base, division captain Meng Tian's room.

Li Yang, the mission's objective this time involves a subgroup of one of the world's top five organizations' Criminal Organization: the Criminal Organization's Mountain Pass group's core member – the Obsidian Dragon Army named Tianzhong Ming Nan. These are all the documents related to him, you must assassinate him before he leaves China. As for the reason, it is all located within these documents!" Meng Tian's words had a slight hint of killing intent behind them. A small mission that involved the Obsidian Dragon Army was not worth his time. However, this Tianzhong Ming Nan in fact made a crucial mistake! A fatal mistake!

The world's top five organizations' Criminal Organization was the strongest power in the underworld.

The Criminal Organization's roots penetrates deeply into society. On the outside, they all look like legitimate companies and enterprises, but nearly everyone was affected in some way by this organization.

Regarding the world's most powerful underworld powers, other than the Criminal Organization, there was the Terrorist Organization, Assassination Organization, hired mercenaries, and of course the special divisions of the country such as the Security Bureau 9th and 11th Division.

The Obsidian Dragon Army was indeed Mountain Pass group's core, Obsidian Dragon Army's members were all crazy militaristic extremists!

"That reminds me, Li Yang, this time Tianzhong Ming Nan's real bodyguard is one of the Japanese Loose Sword Four Styles' Clear Sword Flow; a fencing expert. I estimate that his offensive capabilities are similar to those of the Xiantian realm" Meng Tian reminded him.

Li Yang laughed in a slightly cold tone. "Warrior? Hah, how can they even compare to ninjas? How would he compare to the Golden Flower ranked ninja I fought against last time?"

Meng Tian said while laughing, "Of course he can't be compared to a ninja. In addition, this fellow is simply near Xiantian level. Even if he was a part of 'Dual Flowers', he would simply be at Silver Flower rank. This is precisely why I can hand over this B rank mission over to you without any worries!"

Li Yang with confidence said, "Around this time last year, my victory over that Golden Ranked ninja was simply a fluke. If I were to face him again now though, he will definitely die instantly!"

Li Yang had a lot of confidence, after all, with his mad training over the past year with each session taking up over fifteen hours, his strength has completely improved by several folds. Last year, his energy was simply around 30 crystals, now he had already surpassed 80 crystals!

"I also understand that you have made significant improvements over the last year. As long as you complete this mission, then the last A rank mission you've completed together with this B rank mission will help out your goal of passing the upcoming assessment greatly. Last year, your strength was really too low and you did not get recruited. This year, you will definitely succeed!" Meng Tian said encouragingly.

Suddenly, there was a flash within Li Yang's eyes. He knew that in order to pass the assessment and be recruited into the Security Bureau 11th Division, not only was one's strength taken into account, but their completed missions were an important factor as well.

The A ranked mission he completed last year was already enough for him to enter the Security Bureau 11th Division, however his strength was really too low. Most likely this year after he has raised his strength by several times, as well as improving his offensive power by a large margin, he was certain that he could enter the Security Bureau 11th division.

"Division captain, this time I will definitely perfectly and successfully complete this mission. Just wait for my good news!" Li Yang smiled and left while holding the documents.

The mission objective, Mountain Pass's core – Obsidian Dragon Army Leader Obsidian Dragon General's five major subordinates' Tianzhong

Ming Xin's younger brother Tianzhong Ming Nan.

Tianzhong Ming Nan was a person who excelled at flattering. He was able to blend in so well precisely because he had such an amazing brother. Of course, his ability to please his master was also high.

Obsidian Dragon Army's leader Obsidian Dragon General's grandchild was born with blocked meridians, and was not able to learn ninjutsu, nor could he learn any sword or knife skills.

The Obsidian Dragon General was already old. During World War II, he was already a fully matured adult, his age now was already at least a hundred. However, even though his age exceeded a hundred, within Mountain Pass it was still his words that mattered.

Old people loved their grandchildren; this was a natural instinct, even if it was the Obsidian Dragon General. He too, loved his grandchild, but his grandchild was born with blocked meridians. In other words, ever since he was a baby, his meridians were stuck.

Born with blocked meridians, this was definitely a heavenly punishment. Opening up meridians? That was even more impossible.

Ordinary people at young ages have normal meridians, and only when you grew older would your meridians set. Xiantian realm experts were capable of self-inflicted vitality, which helped one use Xiantian qi to penetrate one's meridians, nourish one's meridians and allow one's meridians to once again rejuvenate with energy.

However as for those born with blocked meridians, then there was no way! This was much worse than having meridians stabilized through age!

However, it still couldn't be said that there was absolutely no method. After all, there was one last way – the Essence Cleansing Dan!

According to legends, there were several ancient mystical cultivators. Their goal was to become immortals! These cultivators' skills were beyond the comprehension of ordinary people. Even if it was the Security Bureau 11th Division experts, in front of those cultivators, they would not have any way of fighting back.

These cultivators at the same time were experts at making Dan medicine, one of them being a miraculous pill – the Essence Cleansing Dan. After taking it, the body goes under a complete rebirth. It didn't matter if you practiced Japanese ninjutsu or Chinese internal cultivation, the training will be sped up by a tremendous amount and increased to an alarming rate!

However did they really exist? These cultivators were simply characters created from mortals' hearts. They only existed in folklore, then what about reality? Were there any that existed in reality?

Even if you were a part of the Security Bureau 9th Division, you would not know if these cultivators exist. However, the Obsidian Army General knew that such cultivators existed. In addition, he knew that the Ninjutsu Five Sects' 'Sacred Canon' was the same as the East Cultivator Ten Sects' comparatively weaker Sect's fundamental law.

According to legends, that Sect was known as – the Wu Hang clan!

A small cultivator sect's most basic fundamental law was actually the Ninjutsu Five Sects' 'Sacred Canon'! This caused the Obsidian Dragon General to have no choice but feel fear!

As for the reason why Tianzhong Ming Nan came to China, was because his brother Tianzhong Ming Xing relayed this mission to him. The mission was to bring back the Essence Cleansing Dan so that it could be gifted to the Obsidian Dragon General!

Eight at night was when Shanghai was most enchanting and most prosperous.

A brand new 2013 limited edition Chevrolet limousine sped past the Shanghai Bund. Within this vehicle was indeed Tianzhong Ming Nan and his three bodyguards as well as an accompanying friend.

His real bodyguard was actually the accompanying individual, Shanxia Xiao Yuan! Shanxia Xiao Yuan was a Clear Sword Style sword expert.

Currently, Tianzhong Ming Nan was extremely proud and happy!

He really did receive the Essence Cleansing Dan, the Essence Cleansing Dan from legends. Of course, for the sake of this Essence Cleansing Dan, he was currently doing business worth one billion dollars with one of China's groups – the Yu Ming Group.

Yu Ming Group had then given him a Dan medicine – the Essence Cleansing Dan.

"Sir Tianzhong, this Essence Cleansing Dan couldn't possibly be fake right?" asked Tianzhong Min Nan's bodyguard, the Clear Sword Style Expert Shanxia Xiao Yuan.

"Sir Shanxia, you do not need to worry about this. I have a hundred percent certainty that this is definitely genuine." Tianzhong Ming Nan said with a brilliant and matchless smile,

"Ah, then I'll simply congratulate you. When the General receives Sir Tianzhong's Essence Cleansing Dan, then Sir Tianzhong's position within the Obsidian Dragon Army will be..." Shanxia Xiao Yuan said while laughing.

Tianzhong Ming Nan said with a pleased smile, "Once I deliver this Essence Cleansing Dan, my position will improve greatly. At that time... heh heh..." A flash of cold radiance flashed within Tianzhong Ming Nan's eyes.

Tianzhong Ming Nan was looking at Shanxia Xiao Yuan who was currently seated on the side, and laughed deeply. "How do you know my brother's position within the Ninjutsu Five Sect? Also this Yu Ming Group's background is not something that you can imagine."

"This time, older brother paid such a high price in order to obtain this Essence Cleansing Dan, why did he do this? Don't tell me that this was solely to improve my position?" Tianzhong Ming Nan always felt fear towards his older brother.

Tianzhong Ming Xing was a Deputy Sect Lord within the Ninjutsu Five

Sect. At the same time, he was one of the Obsidian Dragon Army's five major generals. He was an individual who was deeply unfathomable, matchlessly sinister, and terrifyingly merciless.

"Mr. Tianzhong, we have already arrived at the hotel!" The driver pulled up by Shangri-La Hotel.

Tianzhong Ming Nan was extremely excited today. The evening was the most beautiful time of the day, how could he return to his hotel at this time?

"There's no rush, the Chairman of Yu Ming group gave me a golden VIP card. I still need to pay a visit to the bar that he was talking about!" Tianzhong Ming Nan's face had a shred of a joyous smile. Of course he knew what kind of place this club was.

"Yes!" The driver immediately steered the car and drove on.

From far away, Li Yang's face eluded a thread of a smile. "Ho... You didn't return to Shangri-La Hotel? You are really rather discreet, it isn't as easy to clean up after an assassination within the Shangri-La Hotel. By not returning, you are giving me way more opportunities!"

Shanghai's western suburbs, outside of a luxurious villa.

"Sir Tianzhong, this place was an excellent place after all. However, I have something to say beforehand, I will stay here and enjoy myself, you should not pull me alone at any cost!" Shanxia Xiao Yuan was a Clear Sword Style sword expert. Clear Sword Style's disciples were all

vegetarians, and normally would not go to these 'special' places.

Tianzhong Ming Nan laughed while saying, "Sir Shanxia, I know that you are training in the ways of the sword, but sometimes you still need to enjoy yourself. Don't worry, I won't force you, but at the very least Sir Shanxia should accompany me inside. This time, Sir Shanxia's mission is to protect me and must not leave me alone. Because of this, you must come inside with me."

Shanxia Xiao Yuan bitterly smiled, and walked out from within the car. His mission this time was indeed to protect Tianzhong Ming Nan, and could not leave Tianzhong Ming Nan.

"Walk." Tianzhong Ming Nan led Shanxia Xiao Yuan, and the three bodyguards following closely behind. Their goal was the big doors in front of them.

Xiu!

An ice cold blade awn flashed by!

"Careful!" Shanxia Xiao Yuan's tranquil sword arts bursted out and began to fluctuate, immediately locating the Flying Dagger, and at that moment he let out a big shout. Flipping his hand, a long sword appeared in his grip, and at that moment he decided to block the Flying Dagger with his sword. Shanxia Xiao Yuan was actually a first-rate sword expert. Slightly moving his right wrist, the long sword resolutely slashed out, and within the air there was a flash of sword brilliance; it was obvious that Shanxia Xiao Yuan's sword was a treasure sword.

Shanxia Xiao Yuan had a thread of a smile, because his sword had already completely blocked the trajectory of that Flying Dagger.

A cold smile appeared from the dark place Li Yang was currently at, his mental state instantly entered the 'Joyous Spirit Boundary', his state of mind immediately connected to his Flying Dagger!

Directional Shift!

When the Flying Dagger reached a distance of two meters from where Shanxia Xiao Yuan stood, it suddenly changed directions! Backed with the power from Li Yang's wrist strength, internal energy, as well the unique techniques of the "Xiao Li Flying Dagger", the distance of two meters to the lightning fast Flying Dagger was absolutely insignificant.

Shanxia Xiao Yuan's mental state was momentarily shocked, but before he could react, the Flying Dagger already pierced through his throat!

"Xiao Li Flying Dagger!" Shanxia Xiao Yuan round eyes were wide open, and remembered the rumor that there was a top-level expert in Shanghai. However, before Shanxia Ming Nan could comprehend why "Xiao Li Flying Dagger" would target the measly Tianzhong Ming Nan, he had already died!

Ah!

Only now did Tianzhong Ming Nan yell out.

Xiu Xiu... Li Yang's hands were like lightning, instantly firing out four

Flying Daggers!

Before Tianzhong Ming Nan's bodyguards even had the chance to pull out their guns, their throats were already pierced through by the Flying Daggers.

"Tianzhong Ming Nan! Heng!" Li Yang remembered the information written on the documents provided to him. They said that Tianzhong Ming Nan committed a despicable evil of raping and murdering three Chinese transfer students in Japan. Not only that, but one of the students was the only daughter of a former comrade-in-arms leader of the Security Bureau who died in battle.

Tianzhong Ming Xing chose Tianzhong Ming Nan especially for this mission precisely because Tianzhong Ming Nan was an insignificant figure within the Obsidian Dragon Army.

Mountain Pass Group's Obsidian Dragon Army had numerous amounts of people, if it was not a major figure that entered China, the Security Bureau would not send top-level experts to assassinate them. Tianzhong Ming Nan's flattering and insignificant character would not be viewed with importance. Hiring a Clear Sword Style Expert would be enough.

However, heaven's justice allowed no one to escape, and Tianzhong Ming Nan who committed that despicable deed in the past indeed met retribution! No matter how much Tianzhong Ming Xing thought about this, he would not imagine that he would fail in this area.

"Who is it!" At the door of that luxurious villa suddenly appeared security men who were coldly shouting.

The stone that usually gave off a dark luster hanging around his chest suddenly flashed with a red light. Li Yang began to feel that his heart began to beat faster and his mind was a bit fuzzy. Instantly, his figure flashed, and he appeared in front of Tianzhong Ming Nan's corpse. Reaching out his hands, Flying Dagger's radiance flashed for a moment before suddenly cutting off all of Tianzhong Ming Nan's clothes. Li Yang at once removed from within Tianzhong Ming Nan's clothes a jade case. Upon obtaining the jade case, the stone hanging on Li Yang's collar flashed a red light. After dimming, Li Yang suddenly discovered that his mind was clear again.

"What happened? How did I know that Tianzhong Ming Nan's carried a jade case with him? How did I know that the jade case was sandwiched between his clothes?" Li Yang appeared to be extremely puzzled, however he suddenly heard the steps of the luxurious villa's security.

Li Yang could not afford to think about this anymore, and at once activated his internal energy. His body sped up, and like a puff of smoke disappeared from the street.

When the luxurious villa's security squad arrived, all they saw was the dead body of a Japanese man as well as the petrified driver.

Book 1 Chapter 8 (1-2) – Rebirth

[TL : Xiumoists = Devil's Way cultivator | Xiuzhenist = True Way cultivator]

After returning to his own villa, Li Yang immediately entered the base through his restroom elevator.

Chamber of secrets!

The Security Bureau 9th Division specially constructed ten individual secret chambers. It was taboo to disturb someone while they were undergoing internal cultivation. Because of this, all of these secret chambers were locked with eye scanning technology and only one person could utilize a room at a time.

"Iris Identity Confirmed!" Accompanying the electronic voice, the alloyed door slowly opened. Li Yang immediately entered!

Within the secret chamber there was some consumables available to alleviate hunger, mineral water, as well as many other necessities. These were all laid out by the Security Bureau 9th Division in preparation for their members' seclusion training. There were many benefits to training one's internal energy in seclusion, but to Li Yang it might as well have been chicken ribs, and he did not hold much interest. Seclusion training did not reveal much results for him.

However now, he no longer felt this way!

This is because he just found a brief note inside of the jade case. The note explained how to utilize the Essence Cleansing Dan, as well as how to completely exploit the advantages of the Essence Cleansing Dan.

The jade case revealed a sweat and fragrant odor, and the Dan medicine within revealed a faint green luster. This was actually an Essence Cleansing Dan!

Li Yang sat cross-legged on a mat, and slowly opened the jade case, and a fragrant smell immediately dispersed. Li Yang took a deep breath, and felt that every pore on his body was beginning to open, a truly wonderful feeling.

"The Essence Cleansing Dan is truly deserving of its reputation. It seems like this is something only those Xiuzhenists from legends could produce!" Li Yang carefully inspected the Essence Cleansing Dan from within the jade case.

On the surface, the Essence Cleansing Dan had a faint green luster. Li Yang then purposely turned the lights within that secret chamber off, and immediately the Essence Cleansing Dan appeared as if it was a bright moon, and was incredibly appealing.

Li Yang carefully looked over the note again, the only other thing that it mentioned was that finding a good location before using the Essence Cleansing Dan was essential.

First of all, if the partaker of the Essence Cleansing Dan had blocked meridians from birth, then there needed to be a Xiantian expert there to protect that individual's meridians. Otherwise, a naturally meridian

blocked individual would definitely not be able to withstand the impact of the drug.

Second, if the individual was an adult and wanted to use the medicine to alleviate stabilized meridians, then he only needed to find a Houtian Stage expert to protect the meridians. Of course, if the individual already had a high level of internal energy, then there would be no problems.

With a glance, Li Yang immediately became excited. "Doesn't this suit me perfectly? As of now, although my internal energy cannot be considered great, whatever the outcome was, I still cultivated for two years and my internal energy has reached the first level. The most important part is that my overall strength is already quite powerful. No matter how powerful the medicine is, I am confident that my body can still handle it!" Li Yang looked at the pearl-like Essence Cleansing Dan, his insides beginning to stir.

He was ready to utilize this Essence Cleansing Dan!

Once his internally stabilized meridians problem was solved, was there still a limit to Li Yang's future success?

Shanghai's Yu Ming group headquarters – Yu Ming Skyscraper had a total of 98 floors, recently built within the last year.

Currently, on Yu Ming skyscraper's top floor.

The 98th floor covered a huge amount of area, but no matter how large the area was, it was simply a very large room. This was Chairman Chu

Tianshang's fitness facility, as well as his personal office. This was because there were many different types of exercise equipment lying around as well as a small swimming pool.

At this moment, Chairman Chu Tianshang was currently lying on his recliner, the corners of his mouth revealing a small grin. He was currently looking at the enchanting female celebrities within the swimming pool. These stars in the outside world might be proud and prideful, but in front of Chu Tianshang they were doing everything possible to please him.

Chu Tianshang's stature was a bit chubby, but his body gave off a somewhat warm feeling. The people around him would all feel slightly closer to him.

"Big Brother!" A loud shout rang from within this top floor.

Chu Tianshang immediately had a frown on his face, and glanced at his entering younger brother Chu Tianyu. Following this, he waved his hands for the female celebrities to leave.

"What is making you yell like this, some kind of scandal?" Chu Tianshang lightly scolded him.

Chu Tianyu appeared to be a respectable person, wearing gold framed glasses and bearing a slim figure. Chu Tianyu was usually good tempered. Even when speaking to subordinates, he would have a smile on his face. However, the usually well-tempered Chu Tianyu was currently infuriated.

"Big brother, I heard that you gifted the Essence Cleansing Dan to a Japanese individual all for the sake of a business? I hope big brother can give me a proper explanation. I believe that after Clan Elder Tuan hears about this, he would want a good explanation as well." Chu Tianyu was struggling to suppress his anger.

The Chu family's background was extremely deep, they were supported by one of the cultivator circle's three Xiumoist sects' Moon Fiend Sect!

"Isn't it just an Essence Cleansing Dan? Why are you guys making such a big fuss about this!" Chu Tianshang glared at his younger brother, his face showing a mysterious smile.

Chu Tianyu at once replied in a corrective tone, "Although our Chu family trains as Xiumoists, our ways of dealing with the Japanese have always been resolute. Don't tell me that you have forgotten the humiliation we went through during the war? Now that we have given the Essence Cleansing Dan to the Japanese, heng! If you cannot explain your actions clearly to me today, I, Chu Tianyu will have no choice but to report this to the clan elders!"

Chu Tianshang looked at the stubborn Chu Tianyu, and smiled faintly. Reaching out his hand and pointing across from his recliner, he said, "You should sit down first, we can slowly talk about this."

Chu Tianyu however, did not give any face to Chu Tianshang, and stood where he was motionless.

Chu Tianshang could not help but laugh, then calmly said, "Tianyu, I did indeed give the Japanese the Essence Cleansing Dan, but I forgot to

tell you something. I infused within the Essence Cleansing Dan my Xiumoists' demonic energy." Chu Tianshang said passively, as if he was simply dealing with an ordinary task.

When Chu Tianyu heard this, his eyes momentarily flashed, his previous infuriated mood completely dispersing.

"Big brother, why didn't you say so earlier! Haha, big brother, no wonder you worthy of being the number one of this generation within the Moon Fiend Sect, this is a clever manipulation!" Chu Tianyu began to feel happiness again.

This Essence Cleansing Dan, to a strong and powerful sect such as our Moon Fiend Sect, cannot even be considered a big deal! Chu Tianyu was originally angry at his big brother due to him giving the medicine to the Japanese. Now, he actually admired his older brother.

"Demonic energy, only those who cultivate as a Xiumoist could resist such energy. Heng heng, how can those dog fart ninjas and low level warriors withstand demonic energy? No matter who it is, as long as they absorb this demonic energy, then the demonic energy will completely enter their minds. When he begins to cultivate, he will definitely cause him to be possessed by evil!" Chu Tianyu looked at his big brother and said, "Once the individual who partakes this medicine begins to cultivate, then that person will definitely be possessed, causing them to be paralyzed and eventually causing death! Most likely they will not find out that the reasoning behind this was the Essence Cleansing Dan. Instead, they will believe that the cause of death was rather because of a weak resolve that caused them to become possessed and die!"

Chu Tianshang slowly stood up, and walked towards one side of the

98th top floor. He looked through the enormous window that overlooked Shanghai.

"Unless that individual who absorbed the Essence Cleansing Dan also cultivates as a Xiumoist, and only then will my demonic energy not harm him. However, Japan is 'his' domain, it doesn't matter if it is a Xiumoist or a Xiuzhenist, they all cannot enter.

"Heng, even if in death he acts as if he is possessed, who would think that it was because of our Essence Cleansing Dan? Those Japanese do not have the strength to see through the underlying cause." Chu Tianshang coldly laughed, he really did not think highly of the Japanese experts.

"The person using this Essence Cleansing Dan must be a respectable high-rank individual. One Essence Cleansing Dan not only could kill such a high-ranking individual, but also gain the business of 1 billion dollars, this deal is really cost-effective!" Chu Tianyu looked at his big brother, his eyes containing admiration.

Li Yang, inside one of the Bureau's private chambers.

Li Yang was currently bare-chested and sitting cross-legged on the mat, slowly putting the pearl-like glistening and fragrant Essence Cleansing Dan into his mouth.

Upon receiving the Essence Cleansing Dan, he instantly felt a clear stream flowing within his body.

Li Yang's stabilized meridians were similar to a dried up river, and the

clear stream was like a pure fountain. As the clear streams flowed through his meridians that resembled dried up rivers, Li Yang's meridians began to endlessly absorb that clear stream. Li Yang felt a significant difference as his meridians became more elastic and energetic.

As the clear streams within his body increased in number, the medicinal strength of the Essence Cleansing Dan slowly increased as well. The strength of the Essence Cleansing Dan was simply too strong, and in an instant the clear streams broke through like a dam bursting. The Essence Cleansing Dan's strong medicinal strength immediately erupted within his body...

The clear flow's streams suddenly became rapidly flowing rivers. Li Yang, whose meridians originally were like ditches of a dry lake, suddenly had powerful crazy and rapid streams breaking through all off Li Yang's meridians.

The most crucial part for every mortal was – the Heart Meridian!

As for the medicine's powerful attacking force, if there wasn't an expert using internal energy to protect the heart meridian, then it would definitely break and cause death!

At this time, Li Yang gathered all of his internal energy and surrounded the heart meridian. Although he didn't have much internal energy, it was still enough to protect that small heart meridian. In addition, Li Yang's had an astounding internal energy recuperation speed, and did not worry about running out of internal energy at all! This was the result of Li Yang's training back then when he shot out 3000 blades covered in internal energy every day.

He used a bit of pure internal energy to protect his meridians, and the rest he left up to the Essence Cleansing Dan's medicinal effects.

Under the strong medicinal effects, upon absorbing the medicinal qualities, Li Yang's meridians gained vitality and flexibility and increase in width. However, there was a limit to how wide his meridians could become, after all, he only absorbed the medicinal effects for a short period of time. There could not have been much activity within this short period of time, and because of that his meridians started to get damaged.

His meridians could not withstand such pressure, and so his meridians slowly began to crack open. At the same time, however, the Essence Cleansing Dan's medicinal effects restored his meridians again. The impact of the Essence Cleansing Dan indeed causes the meridians to crack open, and then the medicinal effects would help them recover.

Crack open, recover, crack open, recover...

Meanwhile, every part of Li Yang's body, including his muscles, bones, etc. all began to absorb the medicinal effects of the Essence Cleansing Dan. His muscles developed even more vitality,

Finally, the medicinal effects of the Essence Cleansing Dan began to ease up a bit, and much of the medicinal qualities have already been absorbed by Li Yang's muscles and meridians. All of Li Yang's meridians underwent a complete transformation; his originally small amount of water within a dry lake became the wide and flowing river it is now.

His stabilized meridians was Li Yang's biggest obstacle from enhancing his strength, now, it was finally solved!

However, Li Yang did not notice that when the Essence Cleansing Dan initially entered his body, a sliver of dim crimson energy broke into his body as well. That dim red energy far surpassed his internal energy, and Li Yang could not sense its presence at all.

The dim red flowed against the current, heading directly for Li Yang's brain!

Suddenly, the dark stone that Li Yang always carried emitted a red flash. A faint light rushed at once into Li Yang's body, heading straight for his brain as well. At the same time, the black stone that Li Yang always carried with him turned into powder, and scattered over the floor.

"Haha..." A faint laughter rang out from the depths of Li Yang's mind, but soon after fading away...

Li Yang suddenly opened his eyes. "Laughter?"

"It seemed like just now there was a sound that came from within my head?" Li Yang was a bit uncertain. After all, that sound was faint, and it quickly disappeared afterwards.

"Maybe it was just my imagination, however.... I feel that I have already been reborn. The problem of my meridians being stabilized seems to be solved." Li Yang at this time suddenly realized – that he already underwent rebirth!

Li Yang probed his internal energy through his meridians and felt that they have become wide and tough. To him, it all felt slightly unreal, making him feel a bit light headed.

"Ah! My stabilized meridians have finally been fixed!" Li Yang suddenly rose from the mat he was sitting on and loudly shouted.

"AH! AHHHHHHH!" Li Yang howled towards the sky, roaring like a madman. It was as if all the things that were oppressed within his heart, all of that pressure were released at once.

He succeeded!

The problem with his meridians was finally solved!

He was even born again; now compared to normal cultivators, his meridians were far better!

The year that the 'Dragon Fang' Elite group's number one expert arrived at the Security Bureau 9th Division, Li Yang was indeed one of the weakest. After being oppressed for two years, his stabilized meridians was the thing that created the huge chasm between him and the other members. Even though he practiced for fifteen hours as well as other types of cultivation every day, his energy could not surpass 80 crystals. Even the playboy Tian Lin, who was the weakest of the other members, didn't seriously cultivate, and never exceeded the mandatory six hours of practice every day had achieved 200 crystals since he trained from when he was young!

Heavenly Net base's lowest ranked member had three times his power level!

The main reason was because his meridians have stabilized!

Pressure, such overwhelming pressure!

Ever since Jiang Xue has entered his life, the pressure on his life has increased by a lot. If he wanted to live together with Jiang Xue, he had to enter the Security Bureau 11th Division. He was dependent upon his Flying Dagger techniques to enter, but later? You have to understand that only when the Security Bureau 9th Division failed to complete the mission would a Security Bureau 11th Division expert come in.

Once you entered the Security Bureau 11th Division, then your missions at that time would be A-rank at the lowest! With Li Yang's under 100 crystals energy and Flying Dagger skills, maybe could succeed once or twice. However, from that point on all of your opponents would be experts exceeding 1000 crystals of power; if he even slipped up even once, then he was done for! There would be no way for him to be together with Jian Xue again.

Was Li Yang willing to part from Jiang Xue? Could he bear letting Jian Xue live alone in despair?

"Absolutely not. Once I am together with Jiang Xue, I definitely cannot die during a mission and make her suffer alone in sadness. I must improve my strength in order to survive all of the missions to come! I must do this in order to prolong the time we can spend together..." Li

Yang's eyes stared firmly and resolutely in front, as well as stopping his previous crazy howling.

The past Li Yang did indeed have a weak amount of energy, as well as feel huge amounts of pressure for the future when he was together with Jiang Xue!

However, with the appearance of the Essence Cleansing Dan, everything was solved!

Now, Li Yang's meridians were even tougher and broader than Hei Yan's, completely reformed! In the future, his cultivation will easily increase by leaps and bounds, great strength was just around the corner!

"Xue, wait for me, I will definitely increase my strength. I am prepared to live with you until all the hair on my head becomes white, whether it be A-ranked missions or higher, I will successfully complete them all without any accidents!" Li Yang said this with firm confidence! This was the confidence he felt for his future!

A dragon once trapped within the seas, once ascended to the heavens will certainly be earth-shattering and soar to the highest of the heavens! Now that Li Yang was reborn, who could possibly stop his potential?

Book 1 Chapter 9 (Pt. 1-2) – To Advance by Leaps and Bound

"Huh? Where did my jade stone go?" Li Yang found to his surprise that the jade stone he always carried around his neck suddenly disappeared. Regarding this piece of jade stone, Li Yang had always felt amazement. On the outside, this piece of jade stone simply resembled any other ordinary stone, but there was something that was extremely special about this stone!

Even if you used a laser, there was no way of cutting apart this stone!

How could a stone that couldn't be split apart with a laser possibly be normal? Even if it appeared to be an ordinary stone on the outside, due to its abnormal quality, Li Yang called it 'jade'.

He did not even really know why, but Li Yang really, really liked this stone. He carried it around with him personally, and never took it off. Ever since he obtained this stone, his cultivation's restoration speed dramatically improved, and he thought that his internal cultivation had become slightly easier as well. For someone like him who already had stabilized meridians to be able to cultivate up to the first layer in only two years, Li Yang always had a feeling that this jade stone played a big role in helping him.

Suddenly, Li Yang saw the pile of stone powder next to him. He knew that within this secret chamber, there was no way such powder could have existed in this secret chamber. Seeing that the jade stone was no longer hanging around his chest and that there was a pile of stone powder on the ground, Li Yang was convinced that the powder must have formed from the destruction of the jade stone.

"How could this jade stone that could even resist the power of a laser suddenly turn to powder?" Li Yang was slightly puzzled, but he still smiled while shaking his head. He was currently in an extremely good mood. After all, finally being reborn was something that was far more important than a special stone!

Rarely do things turn out perfectly. Since he just underwent rebirth, even though his jade stone broke, Li Yang did not get too upset. Compared to finally being reborn, a slightly special stone to him wasn't even a big deal.

At this time, Li Yang's upper body was completely soaked in sweat, filthy impurities, as well as threads of horrifying bloodstains. However, between all the filthy impurities and bloodstains, one could see Li Yang's reborn skin. Now, Li Yang's skin were glistening like that of a baby.

"After rebirth, I did not expect to have undergone such huge changes. However, it is still better if I wash myself first!" Being covered in sweat and filth was not a very comfortable feeling. Li Yang walked towards the corner of the secret chamber, pulled the cords and pressed a button that was on the wall. Immediately, water was released from the overhead faucet.

This secret chamber was primarily made for Security Bureau members to either cultivate internally or undergo closed door training. Some members upon entering close door training would remain in here for several months. Whether it be eating, sleeping, showering, *etc.* it would all be within this secret chamber. Although this chamber could not be considered large, it was still no less than 30 square meters.

What could he do after being reformed?

Of course it was to focus on cultivating internally!

Li Yang estimated that his current cultivation speed was probably the fastest it had ever been. His training for the past day was on a whole new level compared to his training before. Originally, his plan was to cultivate his internal energy to a high level, but because of his stabilized meridians, he was forced to focus instead on combat skills. Now that he was reborn, of course he was going to once again focus on internal cultivation. After all, the most important aspect of the 'Xiao Li Flying Dagger' was still internal qi. The difference between a Flying Dagger infused with Houtian qi and one with Xiantian qi was simply enormous!

After washing himself, Li Yang once again began to sit with his legs crossed. He peacefully closed his eyes and entered an ethereal state before starting his internal cultivation.

The 'Joyous Spirit Boundary' allowed Li Yang's mind to improve greatly, as this was apparent in his ability to immediately shift the trajectory of the Flying Dagger. By improving his mind through cultivation, this allowed Li Yang to more easily attune to the world's spirit qi, as well as absorbing it faster.

Although Li Yang currently only possessed the first layer of the 'Six Pure Yang', his recovery speed surpassed that of an ordinary warrior at the first layer by roughly 10 times. Why was this so?

This was precisely because Li Yang's mind cultivation was high. Otherwise, even if Li Yang crazily trained his Flying dagger and squeezed

out every drop of internal energy, his internal energy recovery speed would still not reach his current level.

Units after units of internal energy roared from within his dantian and spread out towards the rest of his body!

Suddenly, Li Yang became endlessly surprised. He discovered an extraordinarily great and wonderful fact. "Ah, previously, although my internal energy recovery speed was great, my meridians did not have enough capacity and could only circulate a tiny amount of internal energy. Now that my meridians have widened, wouldn't the amount of internal energy I can work with increase as well? With my recovery speed, it wouldn't be difficult to increase the internal energy within my meridians by ten times!"

As the internal energy within his expanded meridians slowly increased, Li Yang did not stop circulating the internal energy within them, as well as continuously moving the internal energy from within his dantian into his meridians.

...

As minutes and seconds passed by, Li Yang calmly continued to sit in a cross-legged position. His face contained a hint of radiance, his internal energy causing waves after waves of throbbing sounds...

Within the depths of Li Yang's mind.

"Fucking shit, this 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' is completely a

Xiumoist canonical text. Exactly what kind of person was this Li Xun Huan? How come the Foundational Overlord had never mentioned this? To be able to become a Daoist through both the Way of the Emotion as well as the Way of the Flying Dagger, formidable, truly formidable! The offensive power of the Flying Dagger is even more powerful than that of the Immortal Sword! That Li Xun Huan was absolutely a talented genius. Heng, those immortal fools, saying things like cutting off the seven emotional states and the six vices. This Way of Emotion is much faster. When the Foundational Overlord's fundamental essence of life was still within that rock, he decided to just simply help out that brat, and allowed him to absorb the world's spirit qi quicker. However, his recovery speed was actually faster than ordinary people by ten times. When the Overlord's help didn't have much of an effect yet, this 'Joyous Spirit Boundary' allowed him to better attune to nature. It seems like it was precisely that 'Joyous Spirit Boundary' that played such a role. Not bad, it seems like the Overlord needs this little brat's help in order to return to the Devil realm. Once he fully comprehended these three great boundaries, then he would have entered the way and became a Daoist. By that time, his training will surely become 'one day a thousand miles', progressing extremely rapidly. In addition, with the help of the Foundational Overlord, within a hundred years he would absolutely break through and seize the heavens! At that time, there might be hope for the Overlord to return to the Devil realm! Sigh, this brat is taking so long to cultivate Houtian internal qi, I guess it's better if I help him out a bit!"

.....

Li Yang was currently feeling a bit nervous. The internal energy flowing within his meridians at this moment was ten times that of the past. Logically speaking, reaching the second layer of the 'Six Pure Yang' was absolutely obtainable, however, he was extremely puzzled. Every time, he was simply missing the necessary final push, as the distance separating him from the next layer was a single sheet of paper. However, it was just

this barrier that he simply couldn't break through!

Suddenly, Li Yang felt a strong force of worldly spirit qi breaching into his meridians, quickly transforming into internal energy, directly blending into the surrounding internal energy...

Hong!

That barrier was breached at once, and the internal energy within Li Yang's meridians immediately became a steaming humid river!

He succeeded, he finally reached the 'Six Pure Yang' second layer.

Li Yang stood up with a smile, and felt the throbbing internal qi within his body. The energy within his body definitely surpassed 200 crystals, obtaining a 3 digit level. The current Li Yang was already a third-rank expert!

Suddenly, on Li Yang's face was a hint of confusion. "Where did that last burst of worldly spirit qi come from? My normal spirit qi absorption speed is not even a tenth of that last burst, what happened?

Despite being endlessly puzzled, Li Yang decided to stop thinking about things that he couldn't make sense of. Today's date was October 9th, and there were only 11 days left before the next assessment. During this short 11 days, Li Yang absolutely had to work hard and improve his internal cultivation. He decided that other than that short half an hour he spent on the phone with Jiang Xue, he was going to spend all of his time cultivating internally!

The most important aspect of cultivating internally was to expand one's meridians, as only with wide enough meridians could one accumulate more energy. Because Li Yang was able to undergo rebirth through the Essence Cleansing Dan, his meridians' expansion level was already up to par. Currently, he only needed to gather internal energy, however, this gathering was not just a simple accumulation of internal energy, but rather to allow these internal qi to constantly fuse and revolve until it became completely under the control of his mind.

Li Yang used these ten days to spare no effort in strengthening his current state.

...

October 19th!

Li Yang walked out of the secret chamber with a smile on his face!

He was extremely pleased with the training results from the past ten days. He currently had 100 percent confidence in entering the 'Security Bureau 11th Division'

Of course, Li Yang could not enter the third layer within just ten days.

Simply entering the 'Six Pure Yang' second layer did not mean that you could easily breach the third layer, after all, within each layer there were still gaps. For example, Hei Yan and the eight others (not including the division captain) all reached the 'Six Pure Yang' third layer. However, Hei

Yan had already reached roughly 800 crystals, Tan Jin had around 500 crystals and Tian Lin was only a bit past 200 crystals! Just from this it is obvious that even within the same layer there were wide gaps!

"This Essence Cleansing Dan really is a mystical treasure that only those Xiuzhenists from legends could refine. I estimate that not even Hei Yan and the others could match the extent to which my meridians have extended. Right now, I just need to focus on accumulating internal qi, continuously absorbing it, integrating it within my body and step by step consolidating my current state." Li Yang was simply too satisfied with the effects of the Essence Cleansing Dan.

"En, within ten days' worth of time, I have actually managed to consolidate the second layer. My internal energy is already completely full and after a short time, I might even break through into the third layer!" Li Yang laughed when he thought of this.

Suddenly Li Yang began to frown. "However, it is still strange. Even though I've already gone through rebirth, causing me to no longer need to expand my meridians and simply absorb the world's spirit qi, to completely consolidate the second layer would still require at least 3 months. However, for some reason my speed of absorbing the world's spirit qi increased by nearly ten-fold! In barely 10 days, I've completely consolidated the second layer." Li Yang could not understand this no matter how much he thought about it. Ever since he went into the chamber and underwent rebirth, how could his absorption of the world's spirit qi increase by ten times?

Li Yang was currently standing near the entrance of the chamber, a puzzled expression clouding his face. Suddenly, an individual in the distance began walking in this direction.

"Haha, Li Yang you little bastard, finally we can see you in the flesh again! During this time, I, Tian Lin couldn't even see a hint of your shadow. If it wasn't for the division captain telling me that you were currently inside one of these secret chambers, I would have thought that you eloped with a beauty and left the Security Bureau!" Tian Lin at once discovered the Li Yang who just left the secret chamber.

When Li Yang saw Tian Lin, he immediately casted away his previous doubts. He walked up with a smile and said, "Elope? Together with a beauty? Although the Security Bureau 9th Division doesn't allow marriage, it is allowed in the 11th Division. Are you trying to say that with the strength of me, Li Yang, that is just about to enter the 11th Division, I would need to elope? Haha, however for you, Tian Lin, rumor has it that you have quite a few mistresses outside. If you do not enter the Security Bureau 11th Division this time, I wonder if you've already made plans for that? Haven't division captain Meng Tian scolded you about this before already!" Li Yang took the opportunity to counterattack.

Once Tian Lin heard this, he said with a miserable face, "Can you stop purposely provoking me already... As for the Security Bureau 11th Division, I really do not know when I will be able to enter. The me who doesn't even diligently cultivate, I estimate that only when I turn 30 would I finally enter the 11th Division. Sigh, I can only feel bad for my female friends..." Tian Lin had a pitiful look on his face.

Suddenly, Tian Lin's expression changed and excitedly told Li Yang, "Li Yang, let me tell you some good news. Hei Yan that huge blockhead actually broke through the 'Six Pure Yang' third layer, entering the fourth layer and becoming a Xiantian expert. Haha, within the assessment this time involving all of the Security Bureau 9th Division squads from the different cities, our Hei Yan is guaranteed to pass. Li Yang, with your

dagger skills, you will definitely be able to pass as well. Haha, for our small division to be able to have two pass the assessment at once, it should definitely make all of the other squads gaze in admiration. Meeting fellow peers in the future, I can proudly say; hey, brothers, let me tell you something, that Hei Yan and Li Yang were both my brothers!"

When Li Yang heard this, he began to feel happy within his heart too. "Hei Yan that brat actually succeeded. Working hard indeed pays off. Training so hard under four times pressure, he finally broke through, this is really good news! Ah, that's right, Tian Lin, I am about to go and test out my internal energy to check the results of my training. I'll leave first, you should go do your things as well.

When Tian Lin heard this, he immediately laughed and said, "Li Yang, go ahead of me, I'll take check my cultivation as well. Either way, today is already the 19th and tomorrow is the exam. Even if I trained today, there wouldn't be too much benefits! Let's go!"

Following this, Li Yang and Tian Lin both walked towards the testing area.

At the moment, there was only Hei Yan in the testing area. Hei Yan was sitting on a chair off to the side looking at the screen displaying the words '1350 crystals'. His face was cheerfully grinning and full of smiles.

After more than ten years of painful cultivation, he finally broke through the 'Six Pure Yang' third layer into the fourth layer and became a Xiantian expert. When Hei Yan looked at the display that revealed his current energy level and felt the Xiantian internal qi circulating inside his body, he would even chuckle more cheerfully.

"Hey! Hei Yan!" Tian Lin fiercely shouted.

The grinning Hei Yan was startled and immediately stood up. Only after seeing Tian Lin did he laugh before saying, "Tian Lin you dare to scare me. However, you really did give me quite a startle."

Tian Lin mischievously said, "Hehe, that's because you were sitting there laughing foolishly. When I left the testing area a while back you were giggling, and now I come back to find you still laughing yourself silly. Haha, right, Li Yang I'll help you start the testing machine." Tian Lin looked at the jittery Hei Yan before running over to turn on the testing equipment.

At this time, Li Yang smiled while walking towards Hei Yan.

Seeing Li Yang, Hei Yan began to laugh as well. "Li Yang, now I can enter the Security Bureau 11th Division together with you!"

"In the future when we are brothers in arms, we definitely cannot allow any enemies to invade our country." Li Yang firmly stuck out his hand towards Hei Yan!

"En!" Hei Yan grasped Li Yang's arm and shook it tightly!

This was an agreement between men!

"Hehe, what are you two grown men acting like this. Are you guys made

of glass?" With a cynical voice, Tian Lin walked over.

"Li Yang, the testing machine has already started up, you should go and test yourself!" Tian Lin looked at the two who had 'terror' in their eyes. When he thought about how powerful both Li Yang and Hei Yan were, he immediately changed the topic.

Li Yang smiled and walked over to the testing platform.

The light from the testing machine completely enveloped Li Yang. With a "Di" sound, the testing lights began to fade.

"150 crystals!" An electronic voice rang out.

At once, both Tian Lin and Hei Yan's faces became silly. Ten days ago Li Yang was only 80 crystals. Now his energy level nearly doubled! This rapid speed was simply too frightening. In addition, Li Yang possessed the 'Xiao Li Flying Dagger', its abnormal power was something that they clearly understood. Now that Li Yang suddenly had a power surge, what realm of power would his Flying Dagger reach now?

Book 1 Chapter 10 (Pt. 1-2) – Exam

Li Yang had already planned accordingly. After passing the exam in the morning, he would then leave to buy an engagement in the afternoon to propose to Jiang Xue. He didn't tell Jiang Xue anything on the phone last night because he decided he would surprise her today.

After eating breakfast, Li Yang did some light exercises and before heading towards base.

"Li Yang, you arrived as well. Within our group, you and Hei Yan are most promising ones this time. We all have high hopes for you two!" When Li Yang walked into the base, Tan Jin who arrived earlier laughed and walked towards him.

"Haha, Eldest brother Tan, your energy currently already reached several hundred crystals. After practicing a bit more, even if you don't get accepted this time around, there is still next year. Moreover, even if I get accepted into the Security Bureau 11th Division, I will still sign up to be located in Shanghai!" Li Yang smiled and said.

He decided that upon passing the exam, he would ask for Jiang Xue's hand in marriage and to settle down in Shanghai. After all, Jiang Xue's parents both lived here.

"That's great, in the future we brothers can still meet often. However, this year I'm afraid there no hope left. This assessment is simply too difficult, and the people they take are too few!" Tan Jin helplessly shook his head.

The Security Bureau 11th Division did not accept many people each year. Generally speaking, they would not be recruited unless the individual possessed extraordinary strength.

Soon after, Heavenly Net base's nine members all arrived.

On the other end of the corridor, division captain Meng Tian and two other middle aged-men walked over while chatting amongst themselves. Li Yang's group of nine immediately understood that those two middle-aged men were assessment judges.

When Meng Tian saw his team members, he quickly said something to the other two before walking towards Li Yang's group.

Meng Tian encouragingly smile towards his men and spoke, "This time, you all need to properly display your skills. The two examiners who arrived today are both top level experts from the Security Bureau 11th division. They are both Dacheng realm Xiantian experts.

"Xiantian Dacheng? Aren't they fifth-ranked experts?" Tian Lin suddenly exclaimed, and everyone became shocked. The last assessment only had two fourth-ranked experts, but this time the Security Bureau 11th Division actually sent two fifth-ranked experts.

The gap between ranks increased the higher you reached, and it increased by ten-fold!

Fifth-ranked experts were considered super experts even within the

international underground world. There weren't many Dacheng Xiantian experts within the Security Bureau 9th Division, so when two of them suddenly showed up, how could Li Yang and the others not be shocked?

"Listen up your guys. Last time, the two examiners returned and informed them that there were two members that were qualified to enter the Security 11th Division. In addition, Li Yang's Flying Dagger last time left quite an impression. When they realized that his dagger could immediately shift directions mid-flight, they almost lost. This year, Li Yang's energy level increased by quite a bit, the Security Bureau 11th Division was afraid that they would no longer be a match!" Meng Tian said while laughing.

The two middle-aged men also walked up from behind, and when one of them of them heard these words, he began to lightly scold, "I see how it is Meng Tian, your Li Yang is indeed not bad, but there's no need for such arrogance right? After this exam, won't Li Yang be a part of our Security Bureau 11th Division anyway?"

Meng Tian retorted, "Hehe, you dead octopus, do you remember what you guys said to me when I decided to become a Security Bureau 9th Division captain?"

That year, Meng Tian and the two other middle-aged men were all members of the Security Bureau 11th Division. Normally, Security Bureau 11th Division members would all decide to get married and lead ordinary careers, and secretly blend into the world! However, Meng Tian decided to completely devote his time to his country. He did not marry, and willingly came to China's economic core, Shanghai, to look after a couple of peak Houtian brats.

Li Yang and the others have been together with Meng Tian for quite a long time and yet none of them knew how strong Meng Tian really was. The strength of Meng Tian was definitely not in one bit inferior to Zhang Yu and the other expert, after all, he called Zhang Yu a 'dead octopus'.

"Haha, enough, let's start the assessment!" Zhang Yu laughed loudly, and together with his brother Zhang Shan walked towards the assessment area.

Zhang Yu walked at the very front, the corners of his mouth had a hint of an enigmatic smile. "Worried that fourth-ranked experts weren't a match for Li Yang so the two of us were sent? Meng Tian, this time you guessed wrong." Zhang Yu still remembered the words that the division captain previously said.

"Zhang Yu, this Li Yang must be recruited into my Security Bureau 11th Division regardless of how low his energy level is. Last time those two idiots actually did not recruit Li Yang, they really are retards. Li Yang's potential strength is not something that even the entire Security Bureau 11th Division can handle! Once he enters the Security Bureau 11th Division, then our Security Bureau 11th Division would definitely be able to look down on the underground world!"

"Division captain, are saying that it is the legendary..."

The division captain flatly replied, "You are now already a Dacheng Xiantian, and with a bit more work you would be able to condense a golden Dan. Letting you know this is not a big deal, but behind him is a

Xiuzhenist sect. In addition, it is a major sect from the Kun Lun Paradise!"

Zhang Yu immediately went blank, he clearly understood what the Kun Lun Paradise major sect was!

The Security Bureau's real super experts, such as high ranking members as well as other individuals, were all the same level as a division captain. They were all members of a different Xiuzhen families, and they all cultivated in ordinary Xiuzhen techniques. Although these high ranking members were superior compared to ninjas and warriors, they were far inferior to individuals from the Kun Lun Paradise..

Kun Lun Paradise, that was a Xiuzhen Holy Land! If Li Yang was one of their members, then the power he represented was frightening.

"Li Yang, this time you are going to enter my Security Bureau 11th Division for certain, however, what rank should I give you?" Zhang Yu at this time was already thinking about things to do after the assessment, particularly what rank to give him. Suddenly, Zhang Yu made a decision. "Although Li Yang's offensive power is not bad, there are many who are stronger in the Security Bureau 11th Division. The most important aspect regarding him is his background. Since it's like this, then I will judge his attack power as being at the Xiantian Dacheng level, then I'll assign him to supervising. Won't that be enough?"

Zhang Yu did not dare allow Li Yang to go on any dangerous mission since it would not be worth it if Li Yang sacrificed himself. Supervising was the safest job, and it came with a lot of authority as well.

While Zhang Yu was thinking about these things, he was walking

towards the exam room as well.

"Same rules, everyone must first test their internal energy level. Start up the assessment equipment!" Meng Tian motioned for Tian Lin to start the equipment. Tian Lin was smiling as he walked towards the testing equipment, and since he didn't have high expectations for this assessment at all, he was comparably more relaxed.

"Come up one by one!" Meng Tian ordered them.

The first one to walk up was the confident Hei Yan. As soon as he walked into the testing equipment's vicinity, the exam light shot towards Hei Yan before fading again soon after.

"1,350 Crystals!" A electronic voice sounded out.

Zhang Yu's eyes immediately lit up, his face also had a smiling expression. "Ho, an unexpected surprise!"

Li Yang had already planned accordingly. After passing the exam in the morning, he would then leave to buy an engagement in the afternoon to propose to Jiang Xue. He didn't tell Jiang Xue anything on the phone last night because he decided he would surprise her today.

After eating breakfast, Li Yang did some light exercises and before heading towards base.

"Li Yang, you arrived as well. Within our group, you and Hei Yan are most promising ones this time. We all have high hopes for you two!"

When Li Yang walked into the base, Tan Jin who arrived earlier laughed and walked towards him.

"Haha, Eldest brother Tan, your energy currently already reached several hundred crystals. After practicing a bit more, even if you don't get accepted this time around, there is still next year. Moreover, even if I get accepted into the Security Bureau 11th Division, I will still sign up to be located in Shanghai!" Li Yang smiled and said.

He decided that upon passing the exam, he would ask for Jiang Xue's hand in marriage and to settle down in Shanghai. After all, Jiang Xue's parents both lived here.

"That's great, in the future we brothers can still meet often. However, this year I'm afraid there no hope left. This assessment is simply too difficult, and the people they take are too few!" Tan Jin helplessly shook his head.

The Security Bureau 11th Division did not accept many people each year. Generally speaking, they would not be recruited unless the individual possessed extraordinary strength.

Soon after, Heavenly Net base's nine members all arrived.

On the other end of the corridor, division captain Meng Tian and two other middle aged-men walked over while chatting amongst themselves. Li Yang's group of nine immediately understood that those two middle-aged men were assessment judges.

When Meng Tian saw his team members, he quickly said something to the other two before walking towards Li Yang's group.

Meng Tian encouragingly smile towards his men and spoke, "This time, you all need to properly display your skills. The two examiners who arrived today are both top level experts from the Security Bureau 11th division. They are both Dacheng realm Xiantian experts."

"Xiantian Dacheng? Aren't they fifth-ranked experts?" Tian Lin suddenly exclaimed, and everyone became shocked. The last assessment only had two fourth-ranked experts, but this time the Security Bureau 11th Division actually sent two fifth-ranked experts.

The gap between ranks increased the higher you reached, and it increased by ten-fold!

Fifth-ranked experts were considered super experts even within the international underground world. There weren't many Dacheng Xiantian experts within the Security Bureau 9th Division, so when two of them suddenly showed up, how could Li Yang and the others not be shocked?

"Listen up your guys. Last time, the two examiners returned and informed them that there were two members that were qualified to enter the Security 11th Division. In addition, Li Yang's Flying Dagger last time left quite an impression. When they realized that his dagger could immediately shift directions mid-flight, they almost lost. This year, Li Yang's energy level increased by quite a bit, the Security Bureau 11th Division was afraid that they would no longer be a match!" Meng Tian said while laughing.

The two middle-aged men also walked up from behind, and when one of them of them heard these words, he began to lightly scold, "I see how it is Meng Tian, your Li Yang is indeed not bad, but there's no need for such arrogance right? After this exam, won't Li Yang be a part of our Security Bureau 11th Division anyway?"

Meng Tian retorted, "Hehe, you dead octopus, do you remember what you guys said to me when I decided to become a Security Bureau 9th Division captain?"

That year, Meng Tian and the two other middle-aged men were all members of the Security Bureau 11th Division. Normally, Security Bureau 11th Division members would all decide to get married and lead ordinary careers, and secretly blend into the world! However, Meng Tian decided to completely devote his time to his country. He did not marry, and willingly came to China's economic core, Shanghai, to look after a couple of peak Houtian brats.

Li Yang and the others have been together with Meng Tian for quite a long time and yet none of them knew how strong Meng Tian really was. The strength of Meng Tian was definitely not in one bit inferior to Zhang Yu and the other expert, after all, he called Zhang Yu a 'dead octopus'.

"Haha, enough, let's start the assessment!" Zhang Yu laughed loudly, and together with his brother Zhang Shan walked towards the assessment area.

Zhang Yu walked at the very front, the corners of his mouth had a hint

of an enigmatic smile. "Worried that fourth-ranked experts weren't a match for Li Yang so the two of us were sent? Meng Tian, this time you guessed wrong." Zhang Yu still remembered the words that the division captain previously said.

"Zhang Yu, this Li Yang must be recruited into my Security Bureau 11th Division regardless of how low his energy level is. Last time those two idiots actually did not recruit Li Yang, they really are retards. Li Yang's potential strength is not something that even the entire Security Bureau 11th Division can handle! Once he enters the Security Bureau 11th Division, then our Security Bureau 11th Division would definitely be able to look down on the underground world!"

"Division captain, are saying that it is the legendary..."

The division captain flatly replied, "You are now already a Dacheng Xiantian, and with a bit more work you would be able to condense a golden Dan. Letting you know this is not a big deal, but behind him is a Xiuzhenist sect. In addition, it is a major sect from the Kun Lun Paradise!"

Zhang Yu immediately went blank, he clearly understood what the Kun Lun Paradise major sect was!

The Security Bureau's real super experts, such as high ranking members as well as other individuals, were all the same level as a division captain. They were all members of a different Xiuzhen families, and they all cultivated in ordinary Xiuzhen techniques. Although these high ranking members were superior compared to ninjas and warriors, they were far inferior to individuals from the Kun Lun Paradise..

Kun Lun Paradise, that was a Xiuzhen Holy Land! If Li Yang was one of their members, then the power he represented was frightening.

"Li Yang, this time you are going to enter my Security Bureau 11th Division for certain, however, what rank should I give you?" Zhang Yu at this time was already thinking about things to do after the assessment, particularly what rank to give him. Suddenly, Zhang Yu made a decision. "Although Li Yang's offensive power is not bad, there are many who are stronger in the Security Bureau 11th Division. The most important aspect regarding him is his background. Since it's like this, then I will judge his attack power as being at the Xiantian Dacheng level, then I'll assign him to supervising. Won't that be enough?"

Zhang Yu did not dare allow Li Yang to go on any dangerous mission since it would not be worth it if Li Yang sacrificed himself. Supervising was the safest job, and it came with a lot of authority as well.

While Zhang Yu was thinking about these things, he was walking towards the exam room as well.

"Same rules, everyone must first test their internal energy level. Start up the assessment equipment!" Meng Tian motioned for Tian Lin to start the equipment. Tian Lin was smiling as he walked towards the testing equipment, and since he didn't have high expectations for this assessment at all, he was comparably more relaxed.

"Come up one by one!" Meng Tian ordered them.

The first one to walk up was the confident Hei Yan. As soon as he walked into the testing equipment's vicinity, the exam light shot towards

Hei Yan before fading again soon after.

"1,350 Crystals!" A electronic voice sounded out.

Zhang Yu's eyes immediately lit up, his face also had a smiling expression. "Ho, an unexpected surprise!"

Chapter 11 (Pt. 1-2) – Diamond Ring

"Hei Yan, examination passed!" Zhang Yu and Zhang Shan looked at each other, then announced their decision.

This was an old rule, as long as one reached the level of a fourth-ranked expert, one could immediately enter the Security Bureau 11th Division.

"Congrats, congrats!" Tan Jin and the others all said with smiling expressions, and Hei Yan was laughing as well. Although he previously already knew that he was guaranteed to pass, when it came for the actual recruitment for the Security Bureau 11th Division, Hei Yan was still excited.

"You group of little brats better quickly finish testing before you start chatting!" Meng Tian laughed with speaking, and at once Tan Jin and Yan Jie went up one by one to get tested.

Although they already expected these results, it was still quite disappointing as no one else was able to surpass 1000 crystals. Yan Jie who had the highest was still only nearing 700 crystals.

"300 crystals, haha, I finally improved by a bit. Li Yang, it's your turn, quickly give them something to be surprised about!" Tian Lin was laughing while heading towards Li Yang what speaking. The events that happened last night regarding Li Yang's energy test was only know by Hei Yan and Tian Lin, no one else knew what happened.

Li Yang smiled, and confidently walked into the testing range.

The assessing radiance covered Li Yang's body, and with a Di noise, the light vanished.

"150 crystals!"

Li Yang became a bit discouraged. "It seems like the worldly spirit qi I absorbed this morning circulating within me did not even reach a single crystal. This cultivation will still require an extremely long time!" This single crystal of energy is a really large amount of energy. Ordinary people's entire body's energy might not even amount to a single crystal. Generally speaking, only after undergoing the intensive training from Special Forces would an individual have a couple crystals worth of energy.

Although he himself was quite discouraged, as for the others...

"Ah, third-ranked expert! Li Yang, how did you cultivate these past ten days, last time you were only 80 crystals, how did you all of a sudden read 150 crystals? How could it be so fast?" Tan Jin cried out at once in alarm.

Yan Jie's eyes also became large and round. "Li Yang, you sneaky bastard, formidable, formidable. Even I, Yan Jie, when training to my upmost could only merely increase a bit."

Tan Huo also had his mouth wide open...

Li Yang saw all of these people's dumbfounded expressions, he

immediately tried to act stupid and laugh it off.

Zhang Yu had a fond complexion on his face. He knew previously from Meng Tian that Li Yang's entire body's internal energy was only 80 crystals. No matter how powerful Li Yang's Flying Dagger's were, it would at most be around the attack power of a peak Fourth-ranked expert.

"Attack power roughly equal to a fifth-ranked expert, propose position; supervisor!" Zhang Yu wrote down while commenting.

"When Li Yang's internal energy was only at the 30 crystal level, his attack power was already equally matched with a fourth-ranked expert. At 80 crystals, Li Yan's offensive power should have reached that of a fourth-ranked peak expert. Now that he reached 150 crystals of internal energy, he ought to have reached the realm of early fifth-rank experts! Doing thing like this is not improper at all!" Zhang Yu was consoling himself.

Zhang Yu kept thinking that he 'ought to', 'could', 'should be okay', 'with difficulty' because Zhang Yu originally knew that if Li Yang met a fourth-ranked expert, he would definitely be able to easily take care of him! However, once he met a fifth-ranked expert, there was absolutely no hope left! Instead he would be the one defeated by the fifth-ranked expert!

The disparity between a fourth-rank expert and a fifth-rank expert was simply too insurmountable. Although the current Li Yang could easily defeat fourth-ranked experts, once he met a fifth-ranked expert, he would be absolutely defeated without a chance of success!

Houtian experts could not protect themselves from bullets with their internal qi.

However, Xiantian experts could externalize their internal qi to protect their bodies. The internal qi would likewise change from Houtian to Xiantian and possess astonishing defense, even able to obstruct bullets! However, when faced with Li Yang's Flying Daggers, they were nevertheless still vulnerable.

However, the most powerful were still Dacheng Xiantian experts. Xiantian Dacheng experts' had a nearly unending supply of internal qi. The internal qi that they could protect their bodies with were no longer called 'Internal Qi Protection' but rather 'Stellar Qi Protection'! The 'Stellar Qi Protection' defense was far stronger, and Li Yang's Flying Daggers aren't even able to penetrate them!

Li Yang's strongest technique was his Flying Dagger. If his Flying Dagger could not even penetrate their defense, then he could only await his defeat! Only if Li Yang was able to use Xiantian internal qi could he use the Xiantian qi infused Flying Dagger to pierce through the 'Stellar Qi Protection'!

"However, if Li Yang launched a sneak attack before the Xiantian Dacheng expert could fully utilize the 'Stellar Qi Protection', Li Yang could still potentially gain victory. My decision this time was still not a mistake!" Zhang Yu was beaming while thinking to himself, and he resolutely declared, "Li Yang's internal energy has once again risen greatly. Adding with the fact that he completed an A-rank and B-rank mission as well as having his Flying Dagger's astonishing attack power, I hereby declare that Li Yang has passed the exam!"

There was actually one more test left, and that was the Combat Practical.

However, Zhang Yu could not wait any longer. He recalled Meng Tian order 'this Li Yang absolutely must be recruited into my Security Bureau 11th Division no matter how low Li Yang's internal energy was!'

"Dead octopus, why are you acting so straightforward, isn't there still the 'Combat Practical'? You haven't had the chance to personally taste the 'Xiao Li Flying Dagger'!" Meng Tian asked with slight confusion, he knew that his brother Zhang Yu was known for his strictness, yet this time he passed them with only the energy test. After all, Li Yang's energy only amounted to 150 crystals. Regardless of how well known his Flying Daggers were, knowing his temperament, he should have at least experienced it to convince himself.

"Meng Tian, when this Li Yang completed that A-rank mission, he should have already entered the Security Bureau 11th Division. He wasn't recruited last time because his internal energy was too low. Now that his energy increased so rapidly, his progress has been quite significant! Of course I would pass him. As for the power of his Flying Dagger, haha, when he was only a brat of 30 crystals he killed a fourth-ranked ninja; is this not enough to prove the might of his 'Xiao Li Flying Dagger'?" Zhang Yu replied with a smile.

Although Meng Tian felt that Zhang Yu was acting a bit strange today, he didn't say anything further. After all, Li Yang's strength was something that he understood clearly. For him to enter the Security Bureau 11th Division was already a certainty.

"Alright, next is the Combat Practical! As for Li Yang and Hei Yan, you

two can relax on the side!" Meng Tian announced.

Li Yang was extremely excited, and he really could not wait any longer. After waiting for more than a year, every day only talking 30 minutes on the phone, happiness was so close at hand that his rapidly beating heart was making his head dizzy.

"Division captain, examiners, I have important manners to attend to. Is it possible for me to be excused first?" Li Yang said uncomfortably. He was prepared to leave right now in order to buy that ring!

Zhang Yu at that moment stood up and said with a smile on his face, "Little brother Li Yang, if you have something to do then you should go and do it. Once the Combat Practical ends, I will immediately return to Beijing. At that time, I will send someone to present you with your certificate."

Meng Tian also laughed and said, "Li Yang, passing the exam is an exalted matter within our small squad. Tonight we need to have a good celebration, so remember, the usual restaurant!" This was a tradition, and whenever one of them passed this barrier, then the other brothers would all hold a celebration for them that evening.

Tian Lin nevertheless said mockingly, "Hehe, Li Yang why are you in such a rush? Is it because you want to find a wife as soon as possible?"

Everyone including Meng Tian and Zhang Yu began to laugh suspiciously.

This was not out of the ordinary. Since even though the Security Bureau 9th Division did not permit the leakage of identity or marriage, they could not stop romance. There were still quite a few individuals who had private interactions with females through phone calls. Naturally, they would hide their true identities, and the Security Bureau 9th Division turned a blind eye towards this matter. In the end, as long as none of the team members revealed their identities then it didn't matter too much.

Once these team members passed this barrier, the first thing these successful team members would want to do would be to meet up with the girl that they liked.

"Haha... I am preparing to buy a diamond ring!" Li Yang was slightly embarrassed, but still said it out loud.

When Tian Lin heard this, his eyes at that moment grew wide. 'Ah, you bastard, you are rushing things too quickly, even buying a diamond ring! Ah you idiot, do you know which diamond ring to get? Do you know where they sell good diamond rings?

When Li Yang heard this, he immediately became dumbstruck. He had never bought a diamond ring before, and he had absolutely no knowledge about diamond rings.

"Hehe, Li Yang, you need me for this situation!" Tian Lin said proudly. Although the playboy Tian Lin wasn't too great at other things, in regards to diamond and jewelry, his proficiency could definitely be considered number one among everyone here.

"Division Captain, you understand how low my current strength is. Even

if I participate in the Combat Practical, there is still no way for me to pass. In that case I forfeit!" Tian Lin at once turned around to face Meng Tian and said.

Meng Tian didn't say anything else and simply nodded his head. With Tian Lin's level of strength and cultivation, there should roughly still be ten years before he could enter the Security Bureau 11th Division. Forfeiting once was not a big deal!

"Let's go bro, I'll bring you to buy your diamond ring!" Tian Lin enthusiastically pulled Li Yang's arm and walked outside as if he was the one that needed to buy the diamond ring.

...

Inside the garage.

"Li Yang you idiot, drive your Benz MB320. What type of day is today, you are still going to drive that government issued Volkswagen?" Tian Lin angrily spoke when he say Li Yang walking towards his Volkswagen.

Li Yang was distracted for a second, but soon after turned around and laughed towards Tian Lin, "You're right. Today I am going to propose to Xue for marriage, of course I need to watch my appearance. That's right, Tian Lin, go inside my bedroom and get the furthest blue suit in my wardrobe and bring it over here. Those set of clothes were a gift from my younger brother and I never had the chance to wear it yet. From what he said, those clothes were quite nice." Li Yang said while smiling.

Li Yang had a biological younger brother named Li Shuo, and their mother was a very successful career woman. As for their father, they have never met him before. Their mother owned her own large company, but later on for some strange reason, the year Li Yang turned 16, their mother sold their company to an official's son and left each son with 100 million. The rest of the money was all donated to charity, and their mother entered a mountain village to live in seclusion.

Li Yang and his brother Li Shuo were quite similar and both loved their country, however, they went about it in different ways. Li Yang entered the army, while Li Shuo went into the underworld scene. In addition, he entered in the world's top five criminal organizations' number one: the Great Secret Society!

After a while, Tian Lin returned.

"Fuck, Li Yang, this case has a signature on it. It was actually personally designed by Italian master Clement, hand-crafted! Heavens, this is not something that can be bought with money, who do you think this master Clement is? Even the country's super rich and powerful individuals would not have the privilege of receiving one of these." Tian Lin cried out in alarm, and look at Li Yang with a dumbstruck expression.

Li Yang gently smiled and didn't seem to care that much. His own brother from the Great Secret Society claimed that it was not bad, and in addition he was now currently the Great Secret Society's last disciple. He was responsible for all affairs within Beijing, and with the Great Secret Society's might and power, obtaining a set of clothing was a simple task. Li Yang even suspected that these clothes were a gift from other someone else for Li Shuo, but that brat Li Shuo then gave it to him.

When Li Yang finished changing, he said towards Tian Lin, "Tian Lin, how do these clothes look? These clothes when worn feels rather comfortable." Li Yang at this moment felt some admiration towards that Italian master.

Tian Lin looked at him while stupefied, he swallowed dryly before saying, "Hundreds of others aren't worth even one of these, this master Clement really deserves his reputation. To make so many rich and powerful admire him, this master really isn't a fake. Li Yang, now that you are driving this Benz MB320 and wearing this suit, when proposing who would reject you! Wu wu wu ~~~ while next to you, even I, Tian Lin, feel inferior. Li Yang, I won't go with you this time, it really is a blow to my self-esteem."

"You brat you're still joking around right now, get in the car, hurry and follow me!" Li Yang laughed while scolding, and went with Tian Lin into the car. Soon after, the two drove away.

...

After half an hour, Li Yang and Tian Lin through Tian Lin's recommendation arrived at 'Golden Platinum Lai', a Jewelry Store.

The Jewelry saleswoman's eyes did not remain dull. Upon seeing Li Yang's attire, her eyes lit up, and immediately enthusiastically walked over. "Sir, what would you like to purchase today?"

Li Yang smiled while replying, "Diamond ring. Which diamond ring do you recommend?"

Tian Lin knew what kind of person Li Yang was, and at once said to the saleswoman, "Bring out and let us see your store's most expensive diamond ring."

When the sales lady heard this, her eyes lit up at once. You have to understand that the sales lady earned commission as well, and these saleswomen all hoped to encounter these great rich and powerful individuals so that their commissions would be greater as well. The sales lady didn't walk towards their front counter, but instead picked up her phone and said, "Manager, we have two customers who would like to see the diamond rings in our inner room." The saleswoman at once turned her head and said with a smile, "Gentlemen, please follow me. Our original jewelry store's precious diamond rings are all located within the inner room."

Under the guidance of the sales lady, Li Yang arrived at a hallway. The sales lady stood there, and there were currently two security guards blocking the way. Suddenly, from within the hallway walked out a young male. Upon seeing Li Yang's attire, the smile on his face suddenly became even more brilliant.

"My humble surname is Wang, and I am the current Jewelry City manager. Sir, if I am not mistaken, you are here to buy a diamond ring, so please follow me into this room." Manager Wang smiled as he spoke, and the sales lady at this time left. This corridor was not a place that that saleswoman could enter.

Under the guidance of Manager Wang, Li Yang and Tian Lin entered the room.

"There are three diamond rings here and all of their prices exceed a

million, gentlemen can carefully examine them." The manager retrieved three cases from within the room, opened them, and placed the three cases in front of Li Yang and Tian Lin. When Tian Lin saw that price, his eyes became wide, however when he thought about Li Yang's wealth, he became reassured again.

As Li Yang looked over the three rings, suddenly, his eyes were completely focused on the ring located in the middle.

The manager's eyes lit up at once and the smile on his face became even more brilliant. The ring in the middle was the one that was the most precious ring among the three.

"This butterfly design diamond ring is our store's guarded treasure, and this diamond is also the rarely seen yellow diamond. The wings on the butterfly are embedded with 32 small diamonds. They are 15.58 karats, and the price in RMB is 6,880,000; if this gentleman would like to purchase it, the store can grant you a 10% discount." Manager Wang said fluently, as he had already previously said them many times.

When Li Yang saw this butterfly shape, he immediately liked it. He remembered that back then when he was hospitalized, Jiang Xue particularly liked butterflies. At that time, Li Yang decided to purchase this. As for money, Li Yang never cared in the first place.

"I'll just pick this one!" Li Yang bluntly took out his credit card.

Tian Lin looked astonishingly at the butterfly shaped diamond ring, this ring was more than 6 million but Li Yang's eyes didn't even falter once and seemed as if he never even cared about it.

"Sir, please receive it carefully!" Manager Wang placed both the ring and the credit card in front of Li Yang. "Sir, this is our store's VIP gold card, I hope you will honor us with your presence in the future."

Li Yang received the VIP gold card and did not pay any more attention to Manager Wang and turned around and left this Jewelry City with Tian Lin.

"Tian Lin, this... I'll have to trouble you to return by taxi. Hehe, don't be like this, I will definitely drink a lot with you during the wedding. It's better if you don't watch this proposal!" Li Yang said while laughing.

"Have feelings for the other sex but no feelings for humanity!" Tian Lin grumbled while looking at Li Yang's car that was slowly driving further away.

.....

Li Yang drove up to Jiang Xue's residence. In the past, he came here once before.

"Isn't that Jiang Xue's father?" Li Yang could tell with a glance that the individual on the side playing chess was Jiang Xue's father. The last time he sent Jiang Xue home, Li Yang had previously met Jiang Xue's father, or to be more precise, his future father-in-law. Seeing his future father-in-law, Li Yang felt some excitement in his heart.

Li Yang faintly closed his eyes, a gust of Worldly spirit qi entered his

body, and the internal qi began to circulate and his mental state finally began to calm down. A wave of confidence spontaneously surfaced, and Li Yang opened the car door and walked out!

Book 1 Chapter 12 – Depression

Li Yang took a deep breath. He continuously pondered over what he should say to his future father-in-law before walking towards him.

Ding Ling Ling... Suddenly, Jiang Xue's family telephone rang, and Jiang Xue's father released his chess piece before entering his house. Li Yang was momentarily distracted and could only stand there before turning and walking towards Jiang Xue's house.

"Hello? Oh, honey, is something the matter?" Jiang Xue's father's clear and straightforward voice rang out from the living room. The distance between Li Yang and Jiang Xue's father was only three meters apart and the door was left open, however, he had to wait until Jiang Xue's father finished talking on the phone before entering the house. After all, giving his future father-in-law a good impression was extremely important.

"Wu Wu Wu..." From within the telephone came a sobbing noise.

Li Yang could not restrain himself and gathered his internal qi. The distance between him and the phone was relatively close, and he could clearly hear what was spoken on the phone.

"What's wrong, don't cry, what happened!" Jiang Xue's father at that moment began to holler. When he heard Jiang Xue's mother weeping he immediately felt that something was wrong.

"Xue er passed away, she committed suicide to avoid punishment. The hospital said that she committed suicide to escape punishment!"

Hong!

Li Yang felt as if something exploded next to his ear, and his head was becoming dizzy. The whole world seemed to be swaying back and forth."

"Impossible! Absolutely impossible!" Li Yang's lips involuntarily mumbled, and suddenly howled in a low bellow of rage, "Impossible!"

Li Yang violently moved his body, and hurried over to his car.

Ringing next to his ear was the voice that made his heart tremble.

"Yi gege, I'm waiting for you!"

These were the last words that she spoke last night, as well as the last words she spoke every day this entire year.

How could Xue who was still full of laughter last night on the phone have passed away. How could this be possible?

"Hospital, hospital!" All six of Li Yang's vital organ failed, and he was out of his wits. The only thing in his heart was this one thought; to hurry to the hospital.

Faster...

Faster... Faster...

Li Yang constantly sped up, and with the speed of his car continuously increasing, the speed all of a sudden shot up to 160 kilometers per hour, and the car was like a gust of wind above the streets.

Swift wind!

Completely flustered!

The sound of a police car also screamed while heading in his direction, however, Li Yang's speed was simply too fast!

Faster! Faster! Faster!

Li Yang could only hurry towards the hospital. He did not believe, definitely did not believe that the perfectly fine Jiang Xue from yesterday would have passed away. This was definitely impossible!

Jiang Xue's house was not far from the hospital, and normally Jiang Xue would even walk to work. According to this logic, Li Yang's current speed would get him there extremely quickly, however, Li Yang felt that his car's speed was still far too slow, and time was being stretched endlessly. This was why he was madly increasing his speed, continuously going faster!

He arrived!

"Hong!" Li Yang ferociously stepped on his car brakes and did not care

that his car did not completely stop before immediately opening his car door and leaping out.

Li Yang madly circulated his entire body's internal qi and with his speed reaching its limit, like a wisp of smoke he charged towards the hospital's lobby.

"Speak, where is Jiang Xue?" Li Yang abruptly grabbed one of the nurses and coarsely asked.

That white clad nurse stared blankly for a moment, and looked at the person in front in alarm.

Was the person in front still a person? His eyes were thoroughly red as if he was furious and blood-thirsty. His face was extremely frantic and the muscles on his face were distorted until he looked like a demon. Blood vessels were popping out, and the blood vessels on his forehead were sticking out so much that he was beginning to bleed.

"Speak, where is Jiang Xue?" Li Yang's voice became even more gloomy, and even more terrifying.

"She, she... committed suicide to escape her sins and was delivered to the police station." The white clad nurse finally woke up from her daze and stuttered before quickly speaking.

Police station!

Police station!

Li Yang didn't even completely turn around when his body had already madly rushed towards his car!

While confused, Li Yang's body had already subconsciously entered the car.

"Get out of the car, this is the police!" The traffic police finally caught up.

Hong!

Li Yang's car rammed into the police car before continuously speeding up like before towards the Police Station.

"Stop your car!" The police car screaming sounds once again began to ring out...

...

Within the abyss of Li Yang's mind.

"Sigh, how can this young lad Li Yang's heart be so inconsistent and impatient? Isn't it just a person dying? What does this count for, as long as one's soul is not extinguished, what is there to worry about? At most they would enter the ghost realm, and once the Foundational Overlord helps out a bit, heng heng, and allow you to take off into the Ghost Realm to find that Jiang Xue or whatever, wouldn't everything be alright then? In

addition, right now you are only in the human realm, and even when that Jiang Xue ages she'll still die. Now that she's in the Ghost Realm, she won't die so won't you be together forever in the future?"

"No. For now I won't tell this to that foolish youngster Li Yang. This foolish little boy seems to be undergoing some changes towards his temperament. In addition, the 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' still has its requirements for breakthroughs. Once he completely makes his breakthroughs, I'll then tell him about the existence of the Ghost Realm. If the Foundational Overlord then allows him to seriously cultivate, this youngster will then certainly cultivate with all his might. Haha, with this, won't it be easier for the Foundational Overlord to return to the Devil realm?"

...

Increase the speed, and increase the speed again!

Li Yang was madly increasing his speed!

The only thought in his mind was — to meet Jiang Xue!

"Arrived!" Li Yang slammed his brakes at once, and rushed out from within his car.

Currently within the police station were ten individuals who carried live firearms, and within the police station there was a forty-something year-old married woman who was crying loudly and causing havoc.

"Let me enter, let me see my daughter, let me enter!"

The married woman powerlessly sobbed, but she was not allowed to enter. The police did not allow her to enter.

"My daughter died, so just allow me who was once a mother see her one last time. Why are you blocking me from entering!" The married woman was paralyzed on the floor.

Li Yang saw the ten armed police, and suddenly in a low shout yelled, "Get lost!" However, those ten armed police members instead immediately pointed their guns at Li Yang.

Li Yang's gaze slightly shrank, and he felt that something was out of the ordinary. He did not take action, since although his attack power was high, his defense still did not reach the point where he could block bullets. Now was not the time for him to show off, and the cool-headedness from his special forces training from before once again returned.

"You rascal, do you think that just because you own a Benz you can exceed the speed limit?" Behind them, the traffic police finally caught up again.

Li Yang said in an ice cold tone, "Call your bureau chief and tell him that someone from the Security Bureau 9th Division wants to meet him!"

"What do I care if you are 9th Division or 10th Division, I am even the traffic police's 8th division! First come with me so I can take down your

name..." That traffic police's mouth kept rambling, and one of the ten armed police members suddenly pushed the traffic officer to the side.

That traffic police officer wanted to turn around and curse, but when he saw the person who was pushing him to the side, he immediately had a smiling expression on his face and said, "It turns out to be Major Section Chief Wang, this matter you can just leave to me."

Major Section Chief Wang was the armed police's Section Chief. This time, he heard the police station's bureau chief's call and knew that a serious issue had occurred. There really was not enough time, and rushed over with ten armed police members. Since he was a member of the armed police's Major Section, he still knew about the Security Bureau 9th Division. After all, the Security Bureau 9th Division still dealt with some matters that required their cooperation.

"These are my credentials!" Li Yang held struggled to hold back the anxiety within his heart, and took out his identification materials."

At once, Major Section Chief Wang changed his expression, and said with a smile, "Oh, it turns out that it is someone from within the military. Come, let's go, we can talk inside!"

Li Yang dully said, "Bring me to see the nurse brought in from the hospital."

Major Section Chief Wang felt a bit embarrassed and said, "This, this is not something that can easily be done!"

"Even someone like me isn't qualified? Major Section Chief Wang?" Li Yang said dully. Although he was not as high as Major Section Chief Wang in terms of military ranking, the Security Bureau members had this privilege from the start and it was not something that a military officer could compare with.

Major Section Chief Wang thought about the opposing side's identity, loosened up a bit, and immediately said, "Alright, this is not a big problem. I will bring you there!"

That married woman who was previously paralyzed on the floor once again was filled with vigor, and grabbed Major Section Chief Wang and Li Yang before wailing, "Let me see my daughter, I am begging you, let me see her please."

Li Yang recognized this married lady and she was precisely Jiang Xue's mother. However, that year Li Yang only met Jiang Xue's mother once, and she most likely no longer recognized him.

"Bring this married woman into the custody room!" Major Section Chief Wang ordered.

Li Yang held back the anger and grief within his mind with difficulty; the most important thing to do right now was to meet Jiang Xue.

..

Under the guidance of Major Section Chief Wang, Li Yang arrived at a corridor in the rear court.

"Inside there is where we placed that girl's corpse. You should go inside and take a look, I won't go in with you! Sigh, what a pitiful girl." Major Section Chief Wang let out a huge sigh and stood outside the entrance.

Li Yang stood outside the door. His right hand slightly trembled as he opened the door, and he immediately entered.

In the center of the room lied a delicate body, and covering that body was a white cloth.

Li Yang was shaking and walked forwards step by step. He was scared out of his wits as he walked towards that familiar dreamlike figure.

...

The first time he rescued the Jiang Xue who was being robbed...

"Thank you!" The girl gratefully looked at Li Yang while speaking.

...

Li Yang recalled the fragile and delicate girl from the past, and the corners of his mouth could not help but have a hint of a smile. His feet unconsciously walked closer, closer to that cloth covered body.

...

"Yi gege, it's you. Today at the hospital, there was an extremely cute girl who came to receive treatment. That girl would not stop crying when she was getting her shots..." The past laughter once again rang out next to his ear.

...

Li Yang appeared as if he could hear Jiang Xue's clear, melodious and sweet-sounding voice, and the smile on his face could only continue to grow. His feet continued to move him closer, one step at a time.

...

"I believe that our feelings for each other are just like Liang Shanbo and Zhu Yingtai's where even death could not separate us!"

TL: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Butterfly_Lovers

Hong!

All of the beautiful memories collapsed in a split second!

'Even death cannot separate us'. This sentence was like a magician's spell, and Li Yang who was soaked in his past memories disintegrated in a flash...

Li Yang slowly kneeled, and lifted the white cloth little by little..

It was a face he was familiar with, and Jiang Xue appeared to be sleeping and was just as beautiful as before, making others want to cherish her.

"Yi gege, I'm waiting for you!" The same words that ended each call at the same time represented Jiang Xue's heart. She was waiting, day after day waiting, and was forever waiting...

However...

Li Yang in a daze felt his tears flow from his eyes, and reached out his trembling right hand. He slowly stroked Jiang Xue's face, however, Li Yang could only feel an icy coldness.

At this moment, the two were already separated like yin and yang.

A gloomy voice sounded out...

"Xue, I arrived, I finally arrived, however you... however, why did you wait until this day, I... today is the day that I came to propose to you!"

Li Yang felt as if his heart was slowly being swallowed...

Li Yang looked at Jiang Xue with the same deep emotion as before. "Xue, look, I even bought the ring!" Li Yang hurriedly took out the case from his pocket and carefully took out the ring, however, Li Yang's hands were shaking the whole time.

"Xue, is this ring pretty? I bought this specially for you. I know that you liked butterflies, and bought this butterfly diamond ring for 6 million, do you like it? If you don't like it, I can buy one that's even more expensive, one that's even better. 10 million? 50 million? As long as you want it, I will buy it all, really, I have money, I can buy it..." Li Yang was extremely tense, and kept talking. He was trying hard to place the ring on Jiang Xue's hand.

Suddenly, a bitter cry rang out from within the room.

Li Yang at once became still and didn't say anymore. He didn't say a single sentence, and only carefully looked at Jiang Xue, looking at how beautiful she was, and looked at her lips....

Gradually, a weeping sound filled with grief rang out from within the room, "Xue, I, I didn't even tell you my real name... my real name..."

...

Each day's hopes and expectations, each day's anticipation lasting up until this moment died. Jiang Xue did not receive Li Yang's marriage proposal. When Li Yang just arrived to propose, Jiang Xue instead just left.

Each day, Li Yang and Jiang Xue spoke through the phone, but instead never met face to face again.

What made Li Yang's heart grip with remorse the most was that — he

never even told Jiang Xue his real name!

"AH AH AH AH AH AH!" From the abyss of Li Yang's heart released a sorrowful shout, was it pain? Was it guilt? Was it anger? Was it helplessness? Was it remorse?

Suddenly, an overflow of worldly spirit qi flowed in from the heavens and started to pour into Li Yang's body, almost as if the water being restricted by a dam broke and began to fuse with Li Yang's internal qi. Li Yang's state of mind was still immersed in pain and remorse. He loved a person, and in spite of everything, even when the person he loved died she didn't even know his name! He couldn't even do that for the person he loved!

Pain and suffering that gripped his heart, it was as if an insect was eating away at his soul.

Powerful worldly spirit qi continuously rushed in, however, no matter how great the amount of spirit qi there was, it was still not enough to dispel the remorse within Li Yang's heart by even the slightest amount. Thoughts of depression began to twist his mind...

...

"En, Li Yang this foolish youngster is not bad. He finally obtained the 'Remorse Boundary', and his current cultivation speed will be extremely fast. Seeing him suffer so much, even the Foundational Overlord is beginning to feel soft-hearted and even wanted to tell him that his wife was not truly dead and only entered the Ghost Realm. As for his cultivation, as long as he doesn't end up having 'the soul fly away and

'scatter', it doesn't even truly mean death! Endure, endure, endure. I'll wait until this youngster reaches the 'Despair Boundary', before telling him, otherwise who knows how many months and years it will take before he could break through the third layer of his state of mind? This Li Xun Huan is also quite strange, why did he make the Way of Emotion have the 'Dao of Wounded Emotion'? Could it be that Li Xunhuan also went through such suffering?"

"However, it seems like the outcome is not bad. Right now, Li Yang this little youngster's strength is growing without restraint. In the future, that dog fart Security Bureau will not be able to contain him. Heng, to be restricted by this Security Bureau, me and the Foundational Overlord have long been upset over this matter. This foolish youngster has still stubbornly persisted through it, heng heng, now that his strength is increasing, even if he wanted to stay he can't. In the future, he can only cultivate in my Devil's Way! Great senior Chi You, just use your greatest ability to guide this child who lost his way into the Devil's Way!"

TL: Chi You is the legendary creator of metalworking and weapons

...

On Li Yang face was not a single trace of a mood or expression.

"Heng, after experiencing the Remorse Boundary, my internal energy once again broke through and reached the 'Six Pure Yang' third layer." Li Yang did not have the slightest trace of happiness, only a deep and hidden depression within his bones.

Li Yang had already changed!

Li Yang opened the closed door.

"Major Section Chief Wang, how exactly did this girl die?" Li Yang calmly spoke as if he was talking about a matter that had nothing to do with him.

Fortunately, the wall blocked sound extremely well, and the gloomy sobbing sounds from within the room were not heard by Major Section Chief Wang.

"Sigh this girl is rather pitiful. Her death most likely has something to do with the Holy Forest group's heir Lin Tianyu since that hospital is a subsidiary of the Holy Forest group. After Lin Tianyu looked around for half a day, this girl passed away. In addition, that president of the hospital also hinted towards us that it is related to that Lin official heir." Major Section Chief Wang said with a long sigh.

TL: Lin also means forest

Li Yang also furrowed his eyebrows and said, "But there still isn't any evidence!"

Major Section Chief Wang then said, "How could we possibly find any evidence? The forensic investigator already inspected the body and this girl really did suicide. There was not a single trace of assault on her body, so even if her parents wanted to blame someone, they couldn't. However, this type of event cannot be made public as we currently do not have any unfavorable evidence against the Lin family heir."

Li Yang became silent.

"Lin Tianyu! The hospital's president!" Li Yang began to feel a rising murderous intent from within his heart.

The office of the hospital's president.

The president Fang Shimin was sitting there, and within his heart he gloomily scolded, "That stubborn nurse, wasn't it simply keeping the Lin heir company? For the Lin heir to notice her was her good fortune, but not only did she refuse, she said she had to change her outfit and took some drugs and committed suicide! This really was bad luck, bad luck, the two individuals standing outside as the Lin heir's bodyguards were also idiots, and they didn't even notice that she was committing suicide."

At this moment, Fang Shimin saw a pair of eyes, a pair of deep and abstruse eyes. A stream of indescribable force was released from those eyes, and Fang Shimin gradually felt a desire to sleep before closing his eyes.

Li Yang looked at the hypnotised Fang Shimin in front of him and coldly laughed. With his level of mind cultivation, it was impossible for a normal person to resist his hypnosis.

"How exactly did nurse Jiang Xue die, tell me exactly what happened." Li Yang's question was spoken in a bizarre tone, and Fang Shimin slowly opened his soulless eyes.

"... she unexpectedly took some drugs and committed suicide while changing clothes. In the end, she even made me get chewed out by the Lin heir, it really was bad luck." Fang Shimin told him the entire story.

Within Li Yang's eyes were threads of a fiery blaze, and his teeth were tightly clenched. "Die, die, die, you all should die. To actually go as far as wanting Xue to accompany Lin Tianyu and force Xue to commit suicide, I want you all to ___ and go ___ die!"

TL: ___ was in the raws. I am assuming they are swear words, so use your imagination.

His internal energy was like a torrent as it directly broke into Fang Shimin's brain. At that moment, Fang Shimin's body shook, blood came out from the seven apertures of his head, and died on the spot.

TL: Seven apertures: 2 eyes, 2 ears, 2 nostrils, 1 mouth.

"Xue, towards the people who harmed you, I will not let any of them get away no matter who they are. No matter who!" A flash of red light flashed from Li Yang's eyes.

...

Within the guest room of a small restaurant.

Li Yang calmly sat on top of a bed, and while glancing at the clock, he immediately took out his cell phone. The picture of Xue on his phone made his hand tremble, however his face unexpectedly did not reveal any

expression.

"Oh Shuo, this is big brother Li Yang, get the Great Secret Society's Shanghai branch to help me find information related to Lin Tianyu. As for the reason, it's better if you don't ask." Li Yang hanged up his phone, and gently caressed the thirty Flying Daggers he wore on his body.

"Lin Tianyu, you must die!" Li Yang's voice sounded like it was being forced out between the gaps of his teeth, and his ice cold eyes had a cold radiance that would make people shiver.

However, Li Yang did not even notice that the depression within his heart had already permeated the air, and the red light within his eyes became even richer. His killing intent was also growing stronger.

Book 1 Chapter 13 (Pt.1-3) – Righteousness

A private room within Fuxin Restaurant.

"How come Li Yang that little brat still isn't here?" Meng Tian doubtfully looked at his watch.

Currently within the private room, all nine of the Security Bureau 9th Division members except Li Yang had already arrived. Today's celebration was held especially for Hei Yan and Li Yang, and since Li Yang still haven't arrived, the celebration could not begin yet either.

Drip Drip...

Meng Tian immediately took out his cell phone and turned it to a special frequency to receive some information. However, Meng Tian's facial expression immediately changed.

"Division Captain, what happened?" Tian Lin was a bit sad. He heard that sound and knew that there was another mission. Today was supposed to be a celebration with everyone, and he really could not help but feel a bit unwilling.

Meng Tian's face was a bit pale. He turned his body and said in a serious tone towards the other eight people, "The police station reported that Holy Forest group's Lin Tianyu harassed a nurse to death, and the police station sent us another piece of information. Today during the afternoon, a Security Bureau 9th Division member also went to see that girl's corpse!"

"I did not go!" Meng Tian was the first one to say this.

Hei Yan and the others shook their heads one by one, indicating that they did not go either.

Meng Tian said, "Then there is only Li Yang left. This afternoon, he went to the police station to see the deceased nurse."

Tian Lin spoke at once, "Don't speak drivel. This after, Li Yang went to meet his future wife. That little brat is fortunate, his future wife is a nurse, in the future there will be someone to care for him."

Suddenly, Tian Lin's expression changed and cried out in alarm, "Nurse! Don't tell me..." Tian Ling still remembered Li Yang's happy and joyful appearance when he was talking about Jiang Xue in the car.

Meng Tian's face at that moment became dark.

"Let's go. Let's quickly go to where Lin Tianyu is!" Meng Tian yelled in a loud roar.

Tian Lin asked, "Are we going there to protect Lin Tianyu?" He appeared to be a bit angry.

Meng Tian shifted his head over and looked straightly at Tian Lin before speaking. "Do you know how many different areas the Holy Forest group is involved in? Just their investments alone total to 60 billion

dollars. Now that they brought over another 10 million dollars here, if there was no Holy Forest group, do you know how many people would be unemployed and laid-off? This doesn't even count for much, the most important part is that the chinese-british diplomatic trade far surpasses the trade between China and any other country. What is the reason for this? The reason is because the United Kingdom's top three large groups' Holy Forest group fully supports China! Once something happens to the heir of Holy Forest group, if it was simply Holy Forest group withdrawing 60 billion dollars, then that would not count for much! However, with their influence within the United Kingdom, the Chinese-English relationship will go down the drain. At that time, many exporting companies will go bankrupt, and the amount of people who are laid off will increase! This will have an extremely harmful effect on our country!"

Meng Tian's gaze was firm as he looked at each person!

"The country's best interest above all else! For the country's best interest, all individual resentments and grudges must be put aside."

Hei Yan, Tian Lin, Yan Jie, Tan Jin, Tan Mu, Tan Shui, Tan huo and Tan Tu all stood up one by one. Their expressions were firm, and although they felt pain within their hearts, they all made their choice!

The country's best interest above all else!

"Let's go!"

Meng Tian gave a cold shout and shortly after, the nine people all left.

...

Li Yang's body was covered in an overcoat, and he slowly walked on the sidewalk without a soul as if he was a walking corpse.

"Xue, don't worry, I will get revenge for you." Li Yang mumbled.

Drip Drip...

Li Yang at that moment took out his cell phone and turned it to the special frequency he used to talk to his brother.

"The limousine that Lin Tianyu is currently in will return to their Shanghai villa in three minutes! Brother, what exactly are you going to do, tell me."

Upon receiving the message, Li Yang closed his phone and looked at his watch and continued to walk forward.

"Three minutes, Lin Tianyu, I guess I'll let you live for three more minutes."

...

Li Shuo who was currently in Beijing could not help but constantly feel his heartbeat speeding up. The previously calm and treacherous accomplished Li Shuo when faced with his brother's request, could not refuse. After all, he was his own blood-related brother.

"Ah San, help me prepare a flight to Shanghai as quickly as possible!" Li Shuo picked up the phone and issued a command toward one of his subordinates.

...

Three unique Benz ST100 traveled along the highway.

"Great heir, within the villa are three beautiful woman. They are separated into 15 years old, 20 years old, and 32 years old. They are all the heir's type." Inside of the middle car, a handsome male respectfully spoke to the other male on his side.

The handsome male was the Lin heir's secretary, Ding Yuyang. At the same time, he was also the Lin heir's boyfriend. The Lin heir not only liked woman, but at the same time liked especially handsome boys.

The great heir was precisely Lin Tianyu. The Lin heir was rather unconventional, and his most unique feature was his eyes. When you look into his eyes, it feels as if you've fallen into a quagmire, however, once Lin Tianyu smiled, then he would turn into a well-groomed gentleman.

"En, not bad, Yuyang, it's still you who understand my tastes. The girl we met last time was simply of the best quality, what a pity that she unexpectedly suicided!" The Lin great heir shook his head and sighed while speaking. He appeared to be feeling slightly regretful.

"Great heir, we've arrived at the villa." Yuyang reminded.

At that moment, the three cars stopped, and the Lin heir waited for each person to get out of their cars before the driver drove the car into the garage.

Within the three cars, two of them had bodyguards, and the middle car had Lin Tianyu, Ding Yuyang, as well as a special Church deacon and a bodyguard provided by the Security Bureau. The bodyguards in the two cars in front and in back of them were from the world's best bodyguard company — Black Devil company's eight high level bodyguards.

There wasn't much to say about the Black Devil company, as it was absolutely the No. 1 within the bodyguard world. They were special in that they had Devil battle qi, causing them to be a major power even within the underground world.

Lin Tianyu walked towards the villa under everyone's watchful protection.

Suddenly, a thread of blade radiance flashed by.

A black bodyguard from the Black Devil company's eyes flashed like electricity, and threw himself towards the underbrush next to the villa. The other people acted as if nothing had happened, completely ignoring the blade radiance and continued to walk forward.

Hugh!

Iron fist. The black bodyguard's enormous fist was surrounded by a

black colored qi stream! This was precisely the Black Devil company's special 'Devil battle qi'!

Suddenly, the knife radiance changed! The direction changed in a flash.

The moment the Flying Dagger's direction changed, the Lin heir stopped his body and turned his head. Looking at the underbrush and the direction changing Flying Dagger, the corners of his mouth had a smiling expression.

Ah!

The black bodyguard felt his throat in disbelief and soon after fell to the ground and did not stand up again.

At that moment, the bodyguard sent by the Security Bureau, the special Church deacon, as well as the rest of the bodyguards all looked towards that underbrush!

Xiu! Xiu!

Two light radiances shot towards Lin Tianyu like lightning.

Seeing that their employer was in danger, the two Black Devil expert bodyguards immediately violently shouted. From their bodies appeared a ferocious black colored battle qi, and while wearing this special covering around their fists, they smashed them against the Flying Daggers. They underwent similar upbringing, and the battle qi completely covered their bodies. At the same time, they stood in front of

Lin Tianyu and completely protected him from the front.

With their battle qi at such a level, they were at least experts at the Xiantian realm.

Right when the Flying Dagger was about to collide with their fists, suddenly...

The Flying Dagger shifted directions!

The two bodyguards were not worthy of being called Black Devil Company's expert bodyguards, as their fists were already too late to defend, after all, the speed of the Flying Dagger was too fast. At the last second, they increased the battle qi around their throats by three times.

However, this was a Flying Dagger infused with internal qi! A Flying Dagger that was capable of piercing through a Xiantian experts' internal qi defense!

Ugh! Ugh!

The two bodyguards fell towards the ground in disbelief, and inserted within each of their throats was a Flying Dagger.

"You idiots. Allow me!" A big person spoke in fluent English and stood at the very front.

Li Yang, who was hiding in the underbrush, suddenly had a change in

complexion. Just now, that big person was not in his line of sight. How could Li Yang know that this big guy was the head bodyguard assigned by the Black Devil Company? This time, he pretended to be a driver, Li Tianyu's designated driver.

This big guy was precisely the high-level individual within the Black Devil Company, and one of the eight great super bodyguards — Ai Er!

"Sir!" The other five expert bodyguards understood and immediately took a step back. Ai Er's big mouth slightly opened. "Let's see just how long you are going to hide for!"

Ai Er suddenly violently shouted with a Hou sound, and immediately, powerful Devil battle qi began to erupt. Ai Er leapt up into the skies, and his two legs like guillotine blades vertically chopped out. Two streams of black-colored battle qi shot out from Ai Er's legs at once, as if they were meteors towards the underbrush.

"Not good, this guy was actually a fifth-level expert!" Li Yang as a member of the Security Bureau 9th Division would of course be familiar with the Black Devil Company. He was also able to ascertain the level of battle qi with just a glance.

Faced with the incoming two powerful battle qi attacks, Li Yang nevertheless had to dodge out of the way. He did not move back, but rather charged forwards towards Ai Er, and immediately cut short the distance between him and Ai Er.

Hong!

Those two streams of battle qi caused the underbrush to explode and fly about. From within the underbrush, Li Yang's demonic shadow appeared, and a cold smile appeared from the corners of his mouth. His internal energy revolving around the Flying Dagger, each of his hands gripped a Flying Dagger!

Xiu! Xiu!

Two Flying Daggers shot out at the same time towards two different directions.

"Even if you can block one of them, then there's no way you can block the other one. Lin Tianyu, you are definitely going to die!" Li Yang cruelly gazed towards Lin Tianyu.

Lin Tianyu only carefully examined Li Yang with his eyes, and suddenly from the corners of his mouth eluded an obscure smiling expression. Casually patting the shoulder of the blonde male next to him, this blonde male was precisely that top-level Church deacon.

"I happily and willingly serve Mister Lin!" The Top-level Church deacon Fei Li looked at the Flying Dagger and smiled brilliantly.

Peng!

Fei Li only slightly extended his right hand, and right when Li Yang was going to shift directions, suddenly a stream of white sword radiance appeared from Fei Li's hand. The sword radiance directly penetrated the Flying Dagger, and in a flash cut the Flying Dagger into two pieces. "Ai Er,

I am going going to show my hand once. You take care of that youngster!" Fei Li flung his blonde hair while saying to Ai Er with a smile.

Ai Er angrily shouted, "Fei Li you sissy, you are making me boil with anger. This small matter did not require your assistance."

Hu!

Ai Er's angry fist's speed was astonishing, and the black colored Devil battle qi was like a rising flame, and it directly blasted towards Li Yang's Flying Dagger.

Change Directions!

The Flying Dagger changed its trajectory, and directly shot towards Ai Er's throat!

Hiss~~~

The black colored battle qi around Ai Er's throat suddenly bursted, and the Flying Dagger appeared to have stopped moving. When it sank into the battle qi, it could not pierce through even a little bit.

Peng!

With Li Yang's internal qi and Ai Er's Devil battle qi mutually oppressing each other, the Flying Dagger finally could not bear the pressure and broke into pieces. Li Yang's Flying Dagger was still not capable of

breaking a fifth-level expert's battle qi body protection.

Li Yang's eyes flashed with a fierce light. His body closely followed behind his Flying Daggers, and the internal qi within his body bursted.

The underground boxing technique — Death Leg!

"He!" Li Yang violently shouted out. His right leg transformed into lightning and directly hacked towards Ai Er's head. Ai Er's eyes shined radiantly, and accumulated powerful battle qi within his left hand that was thicker than an ordinary person's thighs and directly attacked Li Yang's right leg.

Hong!

His internal qi and battle collided with a loud bang. Ai Er's battle qi was far more robust than Li Yang's internal qi, however, Ai Er's complexion suddenly changed. This was because he felt that he himself did not use that much force, and that Li Yang was not aiming for his head at all.

Borrowing the force, Li Yang took advantage of the opportunity to turn 180 degrees in the air — Whirlwind Throwing Kick!

Li Yang's right leg was like a viper, rotating while ruthlessly lashing at Ai Er's lower limbs. Peng! Li Yang borrowed force to exert force, and with a frightening speed he did not allow Ai Er to react in time.

Ao! Ai Er painfully shouted out, fortunately he was kicked in the groin, and did not hit the lower limbs. Otherwise, Ai Er would be shouting in an

even more miserable manner.

Li Yang's left leg at once became a chopping blade, and like lightning hacked towards Ai Er's chest.

At the same time, Li Yang's right leg also transformed into a chopping blade!

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! ...

The death leg technique was chained to kill!

Hou!

Ai Er ferociously lifted his head and madly shouted, and the battle qi around his body suddenly exploded. Li Yang's twin leg attack did not show much results, and could only dodge. After retreating a bit, at the same time, the Flying Dagger in Li Yang's hands flashed, and the Flying Dagger directly shot towards Lin Tianyu.

"Fei Li, protect Mister Li." Ai Er's entire body's bones were making a burst of violent Pili Pala sounds. "I dislike the underground Death Leg Technique the most." Ai Er said in a fierce voice n Li Yang's direction.

Ai Er's body abruptly increased in speed, and charged towards Li Yang. "Bastard, go die!" Ai Er's entire body was covered in powerful battle qi, as if he had a tank-like charging power.

When Li Yang saw this scene, he could not help but furrow his brows. Soon after, he clenched his body and jumped. The internal qi was circulating at a crazy speed, and his two legs ferociously smashed towards Ai Er's head.

Peng! Peng!...

Ai Er received Li Yang's attack, and his fist directly blasted towards Li Yang.

"Go die!" Following the loud roar, Ai Er's Iron Fist ruthlessly smashed towards Li Yang. Li Yang immediately wanted to dodge, however, Ai Er's battle qi unexpectedly suddenly increased by three degrees, and the intense and powerful battle qi directly poured into Li Yang's body. The internal qi within his Li Yang's body was like paper, and was instantly blasted apart. The battle qi directly wiped through Li Yang's meridians.

Ai Er actually simply stood still. He believed that with his powerful battle qi, the guy in front of him was definitely going to die.

Pu! Li Yang helplessly kneeled on the floor. From his mouth spouted a big mouthful of blood!

"Could it be that I'm actually going to die?" Li Yang felt a bit helpless within his heart. The opponent actually had so many experts, and from what he noticed there was already two fifth-level experts and eight fourth-level experts.

Suddenly, the battle qi running rampart within Li Yang's body rushed

towards Li Yang's brain, and his brain was like a bottomless pit, and the battle qi completely disappeared.

Li Yang suddenly felt delight within his heart, however, the expression on his face remained the same as before.

"What a pity, a Flying Dagger expert was finished in this way!" Lin Tianyu shook his head and let out a breath. He turned around and wanted to leave.

Xiu!

Li Yang gathered the last of his internal energy, and the Flying Dagger in his right hand was shot out with a flash.

Li Yang's mental state at that suddenly entered the 'Remorse Boundary'!

There were three great boundaries, and with each, the Flying Dagger would gain a unique effect. The 'Joyful Spirit Boundary' was what allowed the Flying Dagger to change directions, so what about the 'Remorse Boundary'? Following Li Yang's mental state entering the 'Remorse Boundary', the powerful spirit force from the heaven and earth violently rushed inside the flying dagger at once. Immediately, the Flying Dagger's light radiance swelled, and its speed reached an outrageous stage.

Remorse Boundary — Flying Dagger Speed Boost!

The originally lightning like Flying Dagger suddenly doubled in speed!

Xiu!

An intense and powerful whistling sound suddenly sounded, and at that moment, the heaven and earth lost its splendor and luster.

Goal — The completely vulnerable Lin Tianyu!

Lin Tianyu looked at the fast incoming Flying Dagger and slightly narrowed his eyes. Threads of cyan-colored lightning radiance flickered about around his body, and the air around his body began to develop traces of wrinkles...

Fei Li slightly laughed, and with a horizontal movement, he stood in front of Li Tianyu's body. He lifted up both of his hands, and from his hands immediately rose white rays of light before turning into a huge light sphere soon after. Li Yang's Flying Dagger's speed was extremely quick, and before the light sphere even completely reached its limit, the Flying Dagger had already arrived with a sharp ear-piercing sound.

Pu!

Lightning! As if it was lightning, Li Yang's Flying Dagger's speed was too fast, and the Flying Dagger already could not be seen. Only a flash of lightning could be seen breaking through Fei Li's light sphere, and at that same moment, the iron casted Flying Dagger had already turned into broken fragments. However, under that frightening speed, the fragments' attack was still extremely formidable.

Fei Li inhaled a mouthful of cold air before collapsing. On his body unexpectedly appeared so many blade scars. Even though he himself had the 'Holy Force' protecting him, he still sustained injuries. One could imagine how frightening the speed of that Flying Dagger was.

Holy Force was a special power that only experts from the Church possessed. Its attack and treatment effects were extremely effective.

Fei Li slowly closed his eyes, and from his body immediately rose the white colored light rays. The wounds caused by the Flying Dagger's fragments recovered at a visible speed. Soon after, the wounds on Fei Li's body had already disappeared.

Fei Li turned around and looked at Lin Tianyu and slightly bowed before saying, "Most respectable Mister Lin Tianyu, this brat is not worth of you taking action. I am enough to take care of him." Lin Tianyu nodded his head in satisfaction, and only the cyan lightning radiance flickered around his body.

Fei Li enviously looked at that cyan-colored lightning awn. However, he knew that this kind of power was not something that one could obtain through talent. It still require a huge amount of power and countless amounts of money, otherwise, the Church would not bestow such a great asset on a slightly talented individual.

"Have I been defeated?" Li Yang could clearly feel that all of the internal qi within his body had already been used up. The fatal wound left behind by that Devil battle qi made it impossible for him to do anything else.

Only after seeing that his employer did not suffer any harm did he turn

around towards Li Yang again.

"Vile bastard, you still wanted to harm Mister Lin." Ai Er felt a shameful anger within his heart, who was he? He was one of the number one bodyguard company — Black Devil's top 8 super experts. As for the confidence he had in his own strength, he firmly believe that his Devil battle qi attack would certainly crush Li Yang. He never would have thought that Li Yang could unexpectedly release an even more powerful attack!

"Drop dead!" The ashamed and angry Ai Er finally went crazy, and his two legs carried a berserk Devil battle qi while ferociously smashing towards Li Yang.

Even if it was a huge rock here instead, it would still most likely be smashed to pieces, not to mention the weak Li Yang.

"Fifth-rank experts, and two of them as well. Haha, God really isn't looking down on me!" Li Yang looked at the legs that were aiming for his life, and the corners of his mouth unexpectedly had a sliver of a bitter smile. "Defeated, defeated. I entered the Remorse Boundary and controlled the great worldly spirit qi inside of the Flying Dagger according to the 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' cheat code. The Flying Dagger's speed doubled, and the attack power should have been enough to break through a fifth-rank expert's defenses. However, under the forceful spirit qi, I could not change the direction of the Flying Dagger!"

Li Yang dropped his head, and gave up all hope.

"However, even if I have to die, I still won't let you, Lin Tianyu, feel

comfortable! Remorse Boundary — Flying Dagger speed boost!" Li Yang yelled out from within in an overcast mood and ferociously raised his head and completely ignored Ai Er's incoming attack. His two hands flashed like lightning, and the Flying Dagger immediately shot out.

"Go die!" Li Yang howled from deep within. All of his power, from his mind's power to the remorse power completely exploded out. The world's spirit qi in that split second flew with terrifying speed into two Flying Daggers, and immediately, everything within the heaven and earth disappeared, and the only thing that remained were those two 'lightning'!

The heaven and earth at that moment completely lost its splendor, and within Li Yang's field of vision, there was only those two bright and shining Flying Daggers. Looking at the two Flying Daggers, Li Yang began to smile and faintly laughed. "Xue, I am coming to meet you." Li Yang's mind in that split second was submerged in an indescribable state.

Faintly looking at that Flying Dagger, Li Yang entered a state where he was without any wishes, demands, care for himself or care for others. He knew that he was certainly going to die, and what was flowing through his core were the telephone calls he had with Jiang Xue, that clear laughter, those moments together at the hospital, Jiang Xue's continuous comfort and blessings, her expression every time she saw him...

Suddenly, Li Yang felt the heaven and the earth. He could feel Ai Er and Fei Li's internal power, as well as the terrifying and valiant power within Lin Tianyu's body. At the same time, he could also feel the incoming comrades 100 meters away from the Security Bureau 9th Division, and most importantly, he could sense his own Flying Dagger!

Despair Boundary!

The 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' third layer — Despair Boundary. In the split second before facing death, Li Yang at last realized that this was a realm between life and death where one was without any wishes, demands, care for himself or care for others.

The Joyous Spirit Boundary's specialty was its ability to allow the Flying Dagger to change directions and the Remorse Boundary's specialty was its ability to give the Flying Dagger a speed boost, then what about the Despair Boundary?

At this moment, Li Yang finally understood, because currently, he could at last completely understand everything about the Flying Dagger. The Flying Dagger was like he himself, and the Flying Dagger seemed like it was being controlled by two formless hands.

Speed Boost! Directional Shift!

From Li Yang's eyes released a radiant light, and at that moment between life and death, he could see his wish for victory, and the terrifyingly fast Flying Dagger unexpectedly seemed to be as flexible as a fish. It continuously changed directions, and Fei Li, who was standing in front of Lin Tianyu, felt his complexion change.

Fei Li Immediately released a loud howl, and the pure and holy white rays of light immediately burned from his body. From Fei Li's waist, a knight sword flew out at once, and at this moment, Fei Li finally released his most powerful fifth-ranked power.

"Mr. Yang, the bodyguard provided by the Security Bureau, why haven't you taken action yet? Don't tell me that you wanted me to remind you?" Lin Tianyu spoke towards the bodyguard provided by the Security Bureau 11th Division.

Yang Ou said in a calm voice, "Don't be anxious, when those two cannot resist any longer, I will naturally take action, for example, the current situation." Yang Ou's face became a bit red, and his right hand became fiery red. Yang Ou's hand was like lightning, and directly placed them in front of the Flying Dagger, his body in front of Lin Tianyu.

"Xiao Li Flying Dagger, perhaps you were indeed that Security Bureau 9th Division youngster right? Sigh, I have no choice but to dispose of you!" Yang Ou sighed, he had already guessed ever since the Flying Dagger came flying out. After all, within China's underground world, there was not another individual who knew how to use the Xiao Li Flying Dagger. In addition, they were currently in Shanghai, but the most important thing was that the age was about the same.

Yang Ou's right hand released metallic rays of light, and at the same time, the surface of his body emitted a fiery colored moving stream of qi.

Although Li Yang could control the Flying Dagger and allow it to change directions, with the Flying Dagger flying at such a fast speed, Li Yang could only manage to change it a few times. In addition, he could only slightly adjust its trajectory, and could not reach the point where he could shift it 90 degrees.

That's why... Li Yang's Flying Dagger was obstructed by both Fei Li and Yang Ou's bodies.

Fei Li's sword and Yang Ou's palm both haven't made contact, as the Flying Dagger immediately changed directions. Fei Li was struck in the abdomen, and Yang Ou was hit in the shoulder.

"Hahaha, what a youngster. With only roughly 20 years of practice, he finally realized this Despair Boundary. Now that he reached all three layers, he is already approaching the natural way, and in the future, his cultivation speed would be much faster. The Foundational Overlord did not reserve his strength too much and helped him a bit. Later on, we can tell him the affairs with his wife!"

Hong!

Ai Er's two legs exploded above Li Yang's body, and the Devil battle qi madly bursted open.

"Ah!" Ai Er's body was powerlessly blasted to the side, and the Li Yang who should have died stood up. Just now, Ai Er's quick and violent attack didn't leave behind the slightest mark, and his body's internal energy was unexpectedly swept away. The situation reached its peak, and Li Yang's right hand lightly wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth.

"Lin Tianyu, now is the time where we will truly decide who will die!" Li Yang's complexion was solemn as he looked at Lin Tianyu. During that split second when he entered the Despair Boundary, he noticed that the terrifying energy within Lin Tianyu far surpassed that of Ai Er and the others. That meant that Lin Tianyu had already surpassed that of a fifth-rank expert, and that even if Li Yang had reached an unprecedented peak, he still hadn't grasped victory. This was why just now, he said

'decide who will die'!

"Li Yang, stop!" Meng Tian's voice suddenly rang out.

Meng Tian's figure flashed and appeared in front of Li Yang.

"Captain, don't block me." Li Yang said in a downcast tone. His two hands flashed with faint rays of light at the same time, and two Flying Daggers suddenly appeared within his hands. Waves of worldly spirit qi continuously flowed into the Flying Dagger, and the surface also began to shine with radiance.

Meng Tian's eyes glared at Li Yang and he firmly said, "Li Yang, return with me."

"Get out of the way Captain, get out of the way right now!" The evil anger within Li Yang exploded forth. When he found out that Jiang Xue died, Li Yang's heart began to develop an evil anger, and now it was getting stronger.

Suddenly from within Li Yang's mind, threads of red colored qi streams began to revolve around his body. At the same time, those threads of red qi streams also continuously circulated within Li Yang's brain. Li Yang's eyes changed developed a blood-thirsty red color soon after.

"Don't force me, Captain, don't force me. Jiang Xue was everything to me, and now that she died, I must kill Lin Tianyu, I must!" The expression on Li Yang's face was a bit sinister.

Meng Tian looked at Li Yang's blood-thirsty eyes and sinister expression. He knew that Li Yang had changed; his temperament had

changed. The bright and open Li Yang who had previously served the country was now filled to the brim with hatred.

"Either he dies or i die!" From within Li Yang's clenched teeth was forced out these few words, and he already couldn't control the revolting internal qi within him.

The power of love was great, exceedingly great, especially for those that you cared about greatly. Once one's heart was moved, then the influence would already be at a level exceeding everyone's expectations. The current Li Yang was just like this, and the power of his love had already begun to change his temperament. Through the Way of Emotion, he could enter the Way of Immortals, and at the same time also enter the Way of the Devil. Under the secret help of the Devil Realm Overlord within Li Yang's mind, Li Yang had already began to walk in the Way of the Devil. At the same time, he also began to develop a Devil attribute.

Meng Tian shook his head and with a firm gaze he said, "Li Yang, Lin Tianyu is indeed at fault, but in regards to this matter, our country will definitely give you a justification, as well as give Jiang Xue's family a justification. However, you must not carry out any personal punishment. You cannot represent the court of law and pronounce a verdict. Today, you have already killed three individuals. Do you know how their family and friends feel? They were only bodyguards, however, they had already died only because you wanted to carry out revenge.

Li Yang's body trembled. "Bodyguard?"

Suddenly, Li Yang's expression became even colder and merciless. "Heng, by becoming a bodyguard, they already had a death wish. To protect scum like Lin Tianyu, Heng Heng, today, no matter who tries to

interfere with me killing Lin Tianyu, I will kill them all." Li Yang's internal energy began to madly circulate and became stronger and stronger. The worldly spirit qi was also endlessly absorbed into his body. After obtaining the 'Despair Boundary', Li Yang's affinity with the heaven and earth spirit qi had already reached an extremely high realm. The worldly spirit qi madly moved about. Ai Er, Meng Tian, Fei Li, Yang Ou as well as Lin Tianyu could all feel it .

"The country above all, Li Yang, could it be that you forgot the pledge you made upon entering the Security Bureau 9th Division? For what reason did all of those 'Dragon Fang' special forces comrades die for? Don't tell me that you don't know what will happen as a result of killing Lin Tianyu?" Meng Tian gave his advice one last time.

Li Yang felt a tremble within his heart. "Dragon Fang?" Suddenly, Li Yang laughed loudly towards the sky. "Haha, haha, Dragon Fang, Dragon Fang. Captain, what great words, what great words..." Li Yang's laughing sound penetrated everyone's ears.

At that moment, Hei Yan, Tian Lin and the others all came as well.

On Li Yang's face was a cruel smile. "Dragon Fang, the number one special forces group. Did you know, however, that I had already tossed aside my status as a comrade? The parents who lost their children in that group did not have anyone to take care of them. They live their lives with barely enough to live, and didn't even have enough money to make a memorial mound for their dead sons. My old Division Captain had already passed away for 10 years, but his parents don't even have enough money to pay him a visit. After collecting 10 years worth of money, that 60 something year-old mother finally had enough travelling expenses to visit the memorial to see him. However, however... that mother did not even have enough money for a return trip!"

Meng Tian and the others all didn't make a single noise. This was the truth, an unchangeable fact. This was also something that grieved them.

Tears flowed from Li Yang's eyes. "You're right, my Dragon Fang comrades all died without regrets, as we were all serving the country."

Suddenly, Li Yang became a bit hysterical. "However, now I understand it all. The countless brothers who died was for whose sake? Don't tell me that it was for the scum of society who had money? Haha, what were we doing all this for, haha... Hilarious, hilarious. Righteousness? When all of our loved ones have already died, what am i still enduring this for? Righteousness? Righteousness can go fuck itself! Once one couldn't even protect one's own wife and still believed in righteousness, today, Lin Tianyu must die. No one can stop me."

Meng Tian continued to stand there, and Yang Ou also stood at his side. Yang Ou still had the wound inflicted by the Flying Dagger. However, now, although the Flying Dagger pierced through his Big Dipper Qi Protection, after piercing through, the Flying Dagger did not have much offensive power left.

Meng Tian and Yang Ou stood in front of Li Yang, and behind Meng Tian was Hei Yan and the others.

"You guys want to obstruct me?" Li Yang looked as if he just saw the funniest joke. "However, are you guys able to block it?" Li Yang's body flashed, and his speed reached its absolute limit. In that same moment, the two Flying Dagger in his hand flew out.

"Lin Tianyu, die!"

Meng Tian and Yang Ou's bodies both flashed, and both of their bodies emitted their Big Dipper Qi Protection.

Xiu! Xiu!

Two beams of meteor like rays of light directly shot out towards Meng Tian and Yang Ou's bodies. Li Yang did not use the directional shift as Meng Tian and Yang Ou wanted to use their bodies to directly block it, and Li Yang could only slightly change its trajectory.

On Yang Ou's body was a faint wound, and Meng Tian's body did not even show a sign of a wound. When Li Yang's Flying Daggers broke through their Big Dipper Qi Protection, the Flying Daggers had already exhausted its power.

"Meng Tian you brat, you are still stronger than me huh. You should have surpassed the 5000 crystals mark right?" Yang Ou saw that Meng Tian's Big Dipper Qi Protection was obviously more formidable than his and couldn't help but calmly laugh.

Meng Tian did not say anything, but instead looked at Li Yang and said, "Return with me!"

"Boy, give it up. Your attack power is too weak, it is merely a couple hundred crystals in power. Even if you've unlocked all three boundaries, you could only at most defeat weaker fifth-ranked experts. Upon striking an expert on the level of your Division Captain, you couldn't even injure

him, forget about the sixth-rank expert Lin Tianyu. You can't even break through their defenses, and you want to kill? Moreover, do you think that by killing him, it would be sufficient to completely vent your anger?"

Li Yang's body shook, and a voice began to vibrate from within him. "Barely killing him would be enough? Barely killing him would be enough to vent anger?" Suddenly, Li Yang furrowed his eyebrows and he was greatly startled. Just now, the voice that came out came from within his head.

"Who are you?"

The voice from Li Yang's head seemed to sound a bit confused. "Me? Eh, I did indeed have a name before in the Mortal Realm called Xiang Yu!"

[TL: Xiang Yu https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Xiang_Yu]

"Xiang Yu?" Li Yang's heart was startled. "Don't tell me that it was that Western Chu Overlord?"

"Haha, not bad! This Overlord is precisely that Xiang Yu. Heng heng, there's no point in doubting it. Do you think that this Overlord would actually try and pretend to be him? If it wasn't for what happened that year... forget it, there's no point in telling a youngster like you." Xiang Yu clearly did not want to reveal the events that happened that year to Li Yang.

Li Yang coldly laughed inside. "Xiang Yu? Xiang Yu is a figure from thousands of years ago. How could he possibly still be alive in this world, isn't that a bit too absurd?"

Xiang Yu became momentarily startled, and shortly after erupted into anger. "What kind of individual is the Overlord? You little immature youngster, although currently, the Overlord is like a trapped dragon within the shallows, it is still not something that a brat like you who hasn't even reached the Golden Dan stage could compare to. Heng, if not for the Overlord, how could you have obtained the Essence Cleansing Dan? If it wasn't for the Overlord's assistance, how could you resist against that baleful demonic force? If not for the Overlord, do you think that God favored you, and that's why your absorption of the worldly spirit qi was faster than an ordinary person by ten times? Fuck, little brat, you really are an idiot that "forgets favors and violates justice"!

Li Yang was stunned. He understood soon after that on the day that he mysteriously obtained that Essence Cleansing Dan, he was able to absorb the heaven and earth spirit qi ten times faster. It turns out that all of this was because of the help of Xiang Yu.

"Alright, I'll believe you for now. However, today, you told me to give up. Tell me, he killed my loved one, how could I possibly give up?" Li Yang could not hold back his resentment.

Xiang Yu laughed and said, "Brat, your luck can't be considered bad. That Jiang Xue of yours did indeed die, however, she is a mortal. Speaking from the point of a cultivator, only if the soul flies away and scatters can they truly be dead. Jiang Xue only had her material body die and entered the Ghost Realm. As long as you cultivate with effort and break through the void, there will definitely be a day where you can meet her again."

Li Yang's mind jolted, and immediately said in a trembling voice, "You

are saying, you are saying that Xue didn't die yet, and that I could still meet her and be together with her?"

Xiang Yu arrogantly said, "Of course, did you not take a good look at who I, the Overlord, really am? The Overlord is the Evil King, a top rate expert from the Devil Realm. If I wasn't, Ke ke, in short, you only have to remember one point. Your Xue did not completely die, and as long as you focus on cultivating and break through the void, then you will have your chance!" Xiang Yu's laughed complacently, as he knew that Li Yang had already taken his bait.

The evil anger within Li Yang's heart began to slowly be suppressed, and his mind once again returned to his previous clear-headedness.

"Li Yang, you still aren't returning with me? Don't tell me that you want me to take action?" Meng Tian reprimanded.

Just now, although Li Yang communicated with Xiang Yu within his mind for quite a while, it only lasted a moment in real time.

Li Yang saw Meng Tian angrily looking at him, and then he glanced at Lin Tianyu. Lin Tianyu had looked at Li Yang with a gaze of mockery the entire time, and although there was a cyan electric current flashing about his body, Lin Tianyu did not truly reveal his entire strength.

"Just barely killing him would be enough?" From within Li Yang once again emerged Xiang Yu's words, and the corners of his mouth turned up into a cold smile. Li Yang did not notice that at that moment, his temperament had already completely changed. That demonic nature had already completely assimilated into his nature.

"Youngster, just agree to that division captain of yours. No matter what happens, you will have the Overlord here. Hehe, the Overlord doesn't even put such small fry in his eyes, right, Li Yang, if you want to kill that Lin Tianyu, this Overlord can help you with that as well."

Li Yang laughed coldly, "No, what you said was correct. By barely killing him, I would not be satisfied. I need to also let him know what despair means, what it means to want to be dead rather than alive."

Li Yang lifted his head and looked at his own division captain Meng Tian and indifferently said, "I'll return with you!"

When Meng Tian heard that, he immediately became happy. He really did not want to take action on Li Yang, however, once Li Yang insisted on rebelling, he had to go into action. Now that Li Yang promised, he of course felt a sense of relief within his heart.

"Lin heir, today's events, we will give you a explanation, let's go!" Meng Tian and Li Yang bluntly left, and Lin Tianyu did not say anything and only smiled.

Lin Tianyu glanced over at Yang Ou and the smile on his head became even more brilliant. "Mr. Yang, three of my bodyguards died. As for the the revenge for these homicides, haha, as how it should be dealt with, i presume Mr. Yang knows how to act, right? Yu Yang, report these things over to General Wang." Immediately after, Lin Tianyu turned his head and walked into his villa.

Yang Ou's brows were tightly locked together, and soon after, he

released a big sigh.

...

Li Yang was placed under house arrest, of course, Li Yang himself did not feel any sense of anxiety. According to Xiang Yu's words, "As long as the Overlord helps you, there wouldn't be a single person in this mortal realm who could trap you."

However, Li Yang did not know that Xiang Yu actually had another statement within his heart that he did not say. "This Kunlun Paradise should actually be considered another dimension of space, and should not be considered part of the earth. That's why the those words said by me, the Overlord, could not be considered wrong." There were countless experts within the Kunlun Paradise, and the current Xiang Yu who was barely hanging on to his fundamental essence was not exactly unparalleled.

Within the a room while under house arrest.

"Li Yang, if you continue to cultivate like this, even if you die you won't break through the void!" Xiang Yu began to harass Li Yang.

Li Yang nodded and replied, "This "Six Pure Yang" at most reaches the sixth-rank realm and it would be impossible to break through the void with it. However, I don't really have another cultivating method." Li Yang did not say anything about wanting Xiang Yu to help him, as he knew that Xiang Yu sought him out for a reason.

Xiang Yu did not want to beat around the bush, and directly said, "Li Yang you little brat, fine, right now, the Overlord will now bestow upon you the Devil Ream's senior canonical text — Great Senior Chi You's 'Demonic Yang Law'. This 'Demonic Yang Law' is split into three boundaries, as well as 15 realms. The three boundaries are split into the 'Stellar Fantasy Boundary,' 'Lunar Phantasm Boundary' and the 'Extreme Yang Boundary'. The first six layers were a part of the 'Stellar Fantasy Boundary', the middle six layers were a part of the 'Lunar Phantasm Boundary' and the last three layers were a part of the 'Extreme Yang Boundary'!"

"Listen carefully. The Overlord will now pass on to you the first six layers, the 'Stellar Fantasy Boundary' martial method chant." Xiang Yu at that moment began to teach Li Yang the chant for the Devil Yang Law's first six layers.

After a long time.

"This, how could this be?" Li Yang was stunned. "This Devil Yang Law's first six layers, the Stellar Fantasy Boundary's chant is actually... actually the Six Pure Yang's chant!!!"

'Six Pure Yang', the Security Bureau's designated cultivating martial method. The Security Bureau 9th Division would give out the chants for the first four layers, and after entering the Security Bureau 11th Division, one would be able to obtain the chants for the fifth and sixth layer. Just now, Li Yang realized that the chants of the Devil Yang Law's first four layers were exactly the same as the chants for the Six Pure Yang.

"This 'Six Pure Yang' is indeed the same as the first six layers of the 'Devil Yang Law', however, there are still some differences. This Devil Yang

Law's first six layers' purpose is to form a Golden Dan, and then afterwards enter in the Devil's Way. This Six Pure Yang's six layers only has the Golden Dan formation chants, and does not have the Devil's Way variant methods!"

Li Yang was slightly doubtful. "En? How do you know the Six Pure Yang's first six layer's chants?"

Xiang's expression became a bit ugly. "This, haha, the Six Pure Yang was what this Overlord gave to the outsiders. Heng heng, don't ask anymore, if you want to learn, then learn. If you don't want to, then don't say unnecessary things!" In the end, Xiang Yu clearly became a bit angry.

Book 1 Chapter 15 [Pt. 1-2] – Transformation

Li Yang passed his days comfortably, extremely comfortably. There weren't any situations that needed his attention, and he spent his entire day cultivating the 'Demonic Yang Law'. The only thing Overlord Xiang Yu did was help increase Li Yang's absorption of the heaven and earth spirit qi.

Li Yang was currently under house arrest in one of Heavenly Net's secluded rooms.

"Xue, wait for me, I will work hard and train." Li Yang was currently sitting cross-legged on the floor while absorbing the world's spirit qi. His internal energy methodically operated within him as it increased, becoming more and more pure and profound. The corners of Li Yang's lips revealed a faint smiling expression, and after knowing that he could still be together with Jiang Xue, Li Yang was no longer interested in the matters of the material world.

"Li Yang, you can't be too impetuous as this route of cultivation opposes the heavens. Even with the help of the Overlord, without half a year, it is impossible to forcefully cross through and succeed in breaking through the void and fly into the Devil Realm!" Xiang Yu reminded, as he was a bit worried that Li Yang might be rushing his training and not establishing a good foundation. When the time to cross over came, it would not be good if his soul was split apart and scattered by the heavens.

Li Yang replied within his mind, "Don't worry, I won't play around with my little life. Moreover, I'm not in a rush right now, because there is still a matter that I need to take care of."

To let Lin Tianyu taste “a little bit” of pain, this was what Li Yang still had to do.

“To force Xue to die, Heng, Lin Tianyu, I will let you learn what is to live but want to die!” The hatred Li Yang had within his heart for Lin Tianyu did not diminish at all.

After Jiang Xue was killed, although there was a chance for Li Yang to once again meet up with Jiang Xue, they would still be apart for more than several hundred years. In addition, cultivating in the Devil’s way was not guaranteed to be safe, and who could be sure that something unexpected wouldn’t happen during the process? All of these needed to be calculated in order to take Li Tianyu’s head.

Li Yang changed, his temperament changed! Perhaps it could be said that he transformed.

In the past, Li Yang would do everything for the sake of his country and follow all of the rules set by it. The current Li Yang after being influenced by the demonic nature only did things that benefited himself. Towards those that showed him kindness, he was thankful, and towards those that treated him with enmity, he took revenge on.

No matter what, however, his personal strength was still of great importance. Because of this, Li Yang had his eyes close, and was earnestly cultivating...

...

Pudong International Airport.

Li Shuo had just gotten off the airplane.

"Mister Li, please enter the car." A man wearing a well-ironed suit came out from a limousine and walked to Li Shuo's side before speaking in a respectful manner.

Li Shuo nodded his head and followed the man into the limousine.

Within the limousine.

Du du— Hearing his cellphone ringing, Li Shuo's brows slightly furrowed. "I already called more than ten times, why hasn't big brother answered yet?"

Li Shuo immediately told the man next to him, "Go directly to where Senior Ceng is." Ceng Honggang was a major disciple of the Hong Mercenaries' Grand Chief. He was in charge of all of the Hong Mercenaries within Shanghai.

...

A villa within the Shanghai suburbs.

"Junior came to me as soon as he arrived in Shanghai, I wonder if it's for the sake of that older brother of yours?" Ceng Honggang was casually

lying down on the couch while looking at Li Shuo with a slight smile on his face.

Li Shuo nodded his head. "Right, Senior, did something happen to my big brother?"

Ceng Honggang slightly laughed and said, "Something happen? It's not something as simple as that, your brother is quite daring, he actually dared to try and assassinate the Holy Forest Group's heir Lin Tianyu."

When Li Shuo heard this, his eyes immediately widened. "Holy Forest Group? The United Kingdom's Holy Forest Group?"

Ceng Honggang joked, "Oh? Are you saying that this is something that I made up? That I am making such a big fuss out of nothing?"

Li Shuo took in a deep breath and calmed himself down before asking, "Senior, how is my older brother nowadays?" After finding out that something happened to his older brother, it was difficult for Li Shuo to keep his past cool-headedness.

Ceng Honggang indifferently said, "Is there even a need to say it out loud? Of course he was brought back by the Security Bureau. However, your brother is quite formidable, and actually managed to kill three Black Devil Group bodyguards. Those were all Fourth-ranked experts! However, that Lin Tianyu definitely wouldn't let the matter rest, therefore..."

"I understand, Senior, then I'm going to leave first!" After Li Shuo found out what he wanted to know, he immediately left.

Ceng Honggang looked at Li Shuo's disappearing figure with a sliver of a slight cold laugh, "Xiao Li Flying Dagger? Li Shuo, although I have never seen you use the Flying Dagger, I'm guessing that you probably know it as well. If it is true, then how I deal with you will have to change as well."

...

A room within a restaurant.

"General Wang, it's already quite obvious what happened. Your men actually wanted to assassinate me, and three of my bodyguards even died. As for "a murderer deserves to pay with his life", the decision on Li Yang's punishment shouldn't take so long right?" Lin Tianyu was sitting on a recliner while comfortably smoking a cigar and looking at Meng Tian.

Meng Tian immediately stood up and said, "General Wang, the Lin heir used his own influence to harass Jiang Xue to death. The reason Li Yang did such things was because the woman he loved died. Ultimately, the situation should still a problem that resulted from the Lin heir's actions. Li Yang's actions are pardonable. I hope the general can be lenient."

General Wang was the highest ranked commander stationed within Shanghai.

"Meng Tian, please sit for now. I have already sent a report concerning today's matters to the Security Bureau 11th Division, so I believe that there will be a decision soon. Although you guys came to me to settle this dispute, it's still better that your Security Bureau people decide. After

all, Li Yang has still successfully completed an A-rank mission!" While General Wang did say things this way, it was obvious that he wanted to help Li Yang stall a bit.

Lin Tianyu faintly laughed dully, and soon after stood up. He gently threw away the cigar in his hand, and looked down towards General Wang. "General Wang, first of all I have to declare that Jiang Xue was not harassed to death by me, but rather suicided. If you guys want to continue to claim that I forced her to death, then we can go to court. Also, not to mention "a murderer has to pay with his own life", your men killed three people. If the general's decision does not satisfy me, I don't mind settling that in court either."

"Right, as Lin Tianyu, I still have some international power. Right now, there aren't many individuals who were able to live after killing my people!" Lin Tianyu had a evil smile on the corners of his mouth as he walked out with Ding Yuyang, Fei Li and Ai Er who were previously standing behind him.

General Wang looked at Lin Tianyu's disappearing figure and helplessly said to Meng Tian, "Meng Tian ah, although our relationship isn't bad, it seems like the current situation is really rather unfavorable..."

Meng Tian's face also had a bitter expression, and said with a sigh, "Li Yang, it seems like this Division Captain really can't help you anymore. Everything will depend on the decision of the general headquarters."

Within the captain of the security bureau's room.

"What!" The captain of the Security was shocked after reading the

report in his hands about Li Yang. He immediately deeply furrowed his eyebrows and worriedly waved for his subordinates to leave.

Within his heart, Li Yang represented a type of power, a power sent by the Kunlun Paradise Sect! Now that this type of situation unfolded, how could he not be in distress!

"Father, according to your words, this Li Yang should be disciple of the Kunlun Paradise Sect, however, we have always somewhat doubted this." Zhang Fan Looked at his own father while speaking.

The head captain looked at his own son and nodded before saying, "Speak, what type of doubt?"

Zhang Fan said, "The Kunlun Paradise is recorded down in the records of my Zhang family. The Kunlun Paradise was founded by Li Xunhuan, however father, think about this. No matter which disciple the Kunlun Paradise Sect sent out, how could they still not have reached the Xiantian realm?"

The captain nodded his head upon hearing this and said, "This is something that I have also thought about in the past. However, the Xiao Li Flying Dagger is definitely genuine. To be able to shift the Flying Dagger mid-flight, other than the Xiao Li Flying Dagger, I have really never heard of such a thing."

Zhang Fan rebutted, "However, is that Xiao Li Flying Dagger really the same one passed down to disciples from the Kunlun Paradise Sect? Is it not possible that Li Yang maybe randomly found some rare text and obtained it? Otherwise, how could he have never cultivated internally?"

From the record within the Security Bureau 9th Division, his meridians had already stabilized, and his meridians were not blocked from birth. Would a disciple from the Kunlun Paradise Sect not cultivate from childhood? Would a Kunlun Paradise disciple have stabilized meridians? Is it possible?"

"Are you saying that Li Yang is just someone who received the Xiao Li Flying Dagger through some random stroke of luck?" When the captain thought about this, his heart already began to develop some doubt.

Zhang Fan looked over before continuing, "Father, that Lin Tianyu still has quite a bit of influence internationally. In addition, Holy Forest Group has still contributed quite a bit to our country. If you ruin your relationship with Lin Tianyu and he decides to pull back all of his investments, once this news travels internationally, this will not be good."

Once the head captain heard this and thought about the results that could happen if Lin Tianyu did decide to do things this way, his brows instantly tightly constricted.

After a long time...

"Zhang Fan, the news regarding Li Yang possibly being a person from the Kunlun Paradise is something that I have only told Zhang Yu. From today forth, I will not allow the news that Li Yang might be from the Kunlun Paradise to be spread around. We will simply pretend that we don't even know of the existence of the Kunlun Paradise. Moreover, the Kunlun Paradise is originally already quite mysterious, so pretending to not know of them is not out of the ordinary." The head captain had already made the decision to abandon Li Yang.

After all, Lin Tianyu wasn't a normal person, and would definitely not keep this a secret. Once word of this left Lin Tianyu's mouth and spread out and reached legal confrontation, then the situation would definitely not be good! Moreover, they weren't even sure if Li Yang was a person from the Kunlun Paradise, and after hearing his own son's words, the captain also was no longer sure. If Li Yang really wasn't a person from the Kunlun Paradise, then wouldn't he be suffering a double loss by defending Li Yang?

Kunlun Paradise was incomparably mysterious, and his Zhang family only managed to have a sliver of information on it. This was why the head captain knew that if he pretended to not know of them, it was still reasonable.

Heavenly Net base, Li Yang within a room under house arrest.

"Li Yang, the division captain can't help you any longer!" Meng Tian opened the room, and sighed while looking at Li Yang who was cultivating with his legs crossed.

Li Yang slowly opened his eyes and looked at Meng Tian before slightly smiling. "Is it for the purpose of carrying out a secret trial on me?" Li Yang had known already for quite a while that this would be the end result, however, he was not nervous at all as he knew that he had the Western Chu Overlord Xiang Yu's help.

Although Xiang Yu lost his material body and only barely remained with some of his primordial spirit, he was still the Devil Realm's Devil King ranked top-notch expert. A small escape was still possible.

"Division Captain, you should have arrived to carry out my trial right!" Li Yang was still smiling like before, and currently, he wanted to get a taste of this secret trial.

Since he could escape at any time, what was the purpose of rushing?

Meng Tian released a long sigh and looked at Li Yang. His eyes were a bit moist, and he began to laugh out of frustration. He patted Li Yang's shoulder while saying, "Li Yang, the country has let you down."

Hei Yan and the others also walked into the room one after another.

"Li Yang, you will forever be my good brother. Forever!" Hei Yan walked to Li Yang's side, and suddenly patted Li Yang's shoulder. His eyes immediately became a bit red. In addition, Tian Lin, Yan Jie, and the five Tan brothers were all feeling pain within their hearts.

"Fuck, what the fuck is this! That bastard hounded Li Yang's girlfriend to death, and now he becomes the first to complain!" Tian Lin suddenly erupted in anger, and the frantic Tian Lin really wanted to go and kill Lin Tianyu right now.

"Tian Lin, shut up!" Meng Tian furrowed his eyebrows and reprimanded in a downcast voice.

"Haha, don't be like this everyone. Smile, smile, Tian Lin, Hei Yan, there's no need to make that kind of face. Smile a bit, isn't it just to go to a secret trial? Haha, who will know what the results of the trial will be like?" Li

Yang patted his comrades' shoulders as he laughed. It seemed as if he was simply looking at the trial in disdain.

However, the more Li Yang acted like this, the more Hei Yan and the others felt pain within their hearts.

...

After half an hour.

Li Yang was escorted to the court of law, and the secret trial began.

Lin Tianyu had already arrived at the court of law long ago with his subordinates and bodyguards. When he saw Li Yang escorted in, Lin Tianyu stood up, and the smile on his face was brilliant.

"Li Yang, you are called Li Yang right? I only heard of your name afterwards, and you should be the underworld 'Xiao Li Flying Dagger' right? To be honest, your Xiao Li Flying Dagger is quite powerful. What a pity that you met me, otherwise your potential to become a legendary ranked expert really isn't an impossible task. Alas, who told you to offend me?" Lin Tianyu appeared to be full of regret.

Li Yang was escorted to the defendant's seat, however, his face still had that amused expression from before.

Li Yang's gaze suddenly rested on Lin Tianyu, and the corners of his mouth tilted upwards. The smile of his face became brighter, and the brilliantly smiling Lin Tianyu even began to feel slightly strange.

“Lin Tianyu.” Li Yang quietly announced Lin Tianyu’s name, and soon began to laugh. He didn’t say anymore, and just like that, he laughed and made Lin Tianyu’s heart tremble. His laugh made Lin Tianyu feel a sense of panic.

Following that, the judge took his seat, and the trial began to start....

...

“... Li Yang’s crime is murder, the penalty is death!”

Even though he heard the final verdict, Li Yang’s face still had that faint smile. On the other hand, Meng Tian, Hei Yan, Tian Lin and the others’ eyes were all red as they looked at Li Yang, as they were all in the same military group!

Soon after, two SWAT members cuffed Li Yang’s arms and legs, and removed Li Yang from the Court of Law.

While leaving the room, Li Yang turned his head and smiled while looking at Lin Tianyu. His lips moved, and when Lin Tianyu saw the smile on Li Yang who was about to die, his heart shook. From Li Yang’s mouth, he saw what Li Yang said — “I will return!”

“At the moment that the death penalty was declared, the past me had already died. The Li Yang now is a new and transformed Li Yang! From today forth, I will no longer live for the country. I will live for myself, and live for Xue!” As he was leaving the court of law’s side room, Li Yang

declared a firm resolution within his heart.

"Li Yang, Male, 24 years old. Entered the military at the age of 16. Due to his exceptional performance, he was admitted into the special forces the same year. At the age of 20, he entered the elite squadron 'Dragon Fang' of the special forces, and two years later, due to his achievements as well as his Flying Dagger, he was recruited into the Security Bureau 9th Division stationed in Shanghai. Within the last two years, he completed an A-ranked mission, and later, his girlfriend Jiang Xue was hounded to death by Holy Forest Group's Lin Tianyu.

Immediately following this event, he attempted to assassinate Lin Tianyu out of anger, however, ending in failure. As a result of insufficient evidence on Lin Tianyu forcing Jiang Xue to suicide, Lin Tianyu is deemed innocent, and Li Yang was the one that was inflicted with the death penalty! His body's power is around 70-80 crystals!"

A white-bearded elder looked at the report within his hand and muttered, "Body energy of 70 crystals, not bad, not bad."

Soon after, the white-haired elder picked up a phone from the desk and said, "General Wang, I want you to directly send some men to escort Li Yang here." After speaking, he didn't wait for General Wang's reaction and directly hung up the phone.

Meanwhile, General Wang was currently within his home as he distractedly looked at the phone in his hand. Only after a short while did he finally show some reaction, and became excited. He immediately dialed a number and told his subordinates, "Directly escort Li Yang to Biological Research Institution Base Number Two."

...

Li Yang felt that something was strange. Originally, when he found out that he was going to receive the death penalty several days later, he wanted Overlord Xiang Yu to use his escape technique to leave. Now, however, he was being sent to an underground base.

"How much did this underground base cost to create... If it really is a multistory building, then the Heavenly Net base would just be a small grass hut." Li Yang looked at the scene in front of him and did not feel much difference.

As for exactly how big this underground base, Li Yang could not determine yet. However, Li Yang already knew that this underground base had a total of three layers, and each layer was much bigger than Heavenly Net base.

One after another, white-coated elders and youth wearing glasses passed by, and Li Yang was escorted by SWAT members to an office.

Upon entering the room, Li Yang saw a white-bearded elder.

"Expert, definitely an expert!" Li Yang had already realized three great realms, and although his body wasn't that powerful yet, his mental realm was rather high. He was able to feel the formidable power coming from the white-bearded elder in front of him.

"Hei, Li Yang you brat, you finally get to meet a Xiuzhenist. This elder in

front of you is precisely an expert who has condensed a golden dan."

The white-bearded elder looked at Li Yang, and the smile on his face was brilliant. It was as if he was looking at a harmless little white rabbit. "You are the one called Li Yang right? This elder today will grandly introduce you to the fruits of my country's research efforts — Model B1 Gene Medicine!"

While speaking, a small blue-colored bottle appeared from within one of the white-bearded elder's hands.

Li Yang furrowed his eyebrows and replying in confusion, "B1 Gene Medicine? What is the relationship between this and the A1, A2 and A3 Gene Medicine?"

When the white-bearded elder heard this, he immediately beamed with happiness. "Good! Since you know about the A Series Gene medicine, things will be much easier to explain! Heng Heng, first of all, this elder wants to seriously state one thing, on the field of biological research, our country has always been at the peak of the world. That's why this A1, A2 and A3 had already been developed within my country way earlier than the others, however, my country simply kept it a secret."

Li Yang in turn asked, "En, the A Series Gene Medicine allows a person's physical body to increase in strength. From A1 to A3, the mortality rate drops from fifty percent to zero. What are the results of this B1 Gene Medicine?"

The white-haired elder spoke proudly, "The results of the B series medicine far surpasses that of the A series, and surpasses it by an entire

grade. While the A series gene medicine could improve one's physical body by hundreds of crystals, this B series medicine can increase it by the thousands."

When Li Yang heard his, he immediately became completely stupefied!

Several thousand crystals! The B Series Gene Medicine was actually this great!

This was like giving birth to a manufactured fourth-ranked expert!

Suddenly, Li Yang's brows suddenly furrowed. He thought of a problem, and shortly after asked, "In regards to the A Series Gene Medicine, the A1 Gene Medicine has the highest mortality rate of fifty percent. In that case, how high is the mortality rate of this B1 medicine?"

When the white-bearded elder heard this, he immediately became mute. Only after a short while when he could no longer bear Li Yang's glare did he reply, "This... Although the results are good, the mortality rate will follow as well. In addition, this is the B Series' first batch of medicine, and so it's still quite imperfect!"

Li Yang was getting a bit impatient. "How high exactly is the mortality rate?"

The white-bearded elder replied, "Haha... ninety percent!"

Li Yang suddenly became dumbstruck. "Ah, ninety percent? That A1 was only fifty percent, to make it past this one will definitely be 'nine deaths

and still alive'... Who would be willing to take this medicine? How do you know the probability?" Li Yang looked at the white-bearded elder with doubt. Without anyone using it, how would he know the mortality rate?"

The white-bearded elder sighed and said, "These... these were all taken from those receiving the death penalty!"

Upon hearing the words 'death penalty', Li Yang's eyebrows immediately lifted, and he strangely laughed. "Oh? Those on death penalty, it seems like I am one of them too? I'm not sure if this elderly mister here will allow me to use this gene medicine as well?"

The white-bearded elder replied without caring too much about his words, "En, my purpose for requesting for you is precisely with such intentions. Right now, you have two paths, one of them is to prepare for your death penalty, and the other is to use this B1 medicine. As long as you don't die, you will become our country's glorious guardian."

Once Li Yang heard this, he immediately began to laugh in a clear voice. "Haha... Glorious Guardian of our country? Does this elderly mister not know what I used to do? In the past, I was precisely someone who didn't have a life for the sake of the country. Now, I am tired, exhausted. I also don't want to delve into those matters anymore, so if it's the death penalty, then whatever. I'm happy to be relieved."

The white-bearded elder did not think that Li Yang would actually think this way, after all, those on the death penalty typically chose to use the gene medicine. After all, there was still a chance to survive, in addition afterwards, they could have powerful strength.

The white-haired elder's expression immediately changed, and shortly after smiled while saying, "The main reason why this medicine caused those people to die is because their physical bodies were not strong enough, and could not support the strong medicinal effects, causing them to die. The stronger the body of the user, the greater the chances of it succeeding. The strength of your physical body has already reached around 70 crystals, and is the highest of all of the experimental subjects so far. Before you, there has been many people who have succeeded, therefore, your probability of succeeding must be much higher."

The white-bearded elder was trying to bewitch Li Yang. Although the reason that the users of this medicine died did indeed have to do with their physical bodies being too weak, the main reason was still that the B1 medicine was still incomplete! The problem still lied with the medicine itself.

"Li Yang, a Xiumoist excels in developing their physical bodies so you should just use it. Isn't it just some medicine? This Overlord can help you recover, so such a small gene medicine can't possibly harm you! In addition, after using it your body would increase by several thousand crystals. This will help you reduce your cultivation time by quite a bit." Xiang Yu was also trying to convince Li Yang, however, what Xiang Yu said was the truth. No matter if it was an immortal realm expert of a devil realm expert, as long as they have sufficient power, they could all be reborn in a flash. Such a small gene medicine was something that they could easily deal with.

When Li Yang heard this, not only did his eyes brighten, he immediately casted his gaze on the white-bearded elder who was waiting in expectation before saying with a smile, "Since its like this, then fine. I agree!"

"When do I use this B1 Gene Medicine, could it be right now?" Li Yang asked.

When the white-bearded elder heard this, he immediately replied, "No, no, no, of course not right now. When utilizing this B1 Medicine, there are many things that we have to watch out for. First of all, the stronger the person utilizing it, the higher the chance of survival. In addition, the amount of strength gained increases as well."

Li Yang slightly furrowed his eyebrows, and did not understand what the white-bearded elder was implying.

When the white-bearded elder saw this, he immediately began to explain in a more detailed manner. "The B1 Gene Medicine is unrivaled in its ability to increase the energy of one's physical body. At the minimum, it would increase by two or three thousand crystals of energy, and there has been six to seven thousand crystals obtained on the higher end. The ones that increased the most in energy were the ones that were previously more powerful as well."

Suddenly, the white-bearded elder let out a sigh before saying, "Pity, however, that those undergoing the death penalty at the highest only had 30 crystals of energy!"

Soon after, the white-bearded elder laughed and said, "That's why I arranged for those under the death penalty to first undergo training, a crazy type of training. Only when their bodies became stronger did I allow them to use the B1 Gene Medicine. Currently, our base's second layer is used solely for their training. Currently, there are thirteen individuals who are on the death penalty training in there, and among them, there is one who has reached over 50 crystals of energy. Although

right now you have already surpassed seventy crystals, I still hope that you will train for a period of time. The stronger the energy of the physical body, the better!"

Li Yang finally understood the white-bearded elder's intentions.

"You want me to continue to train for a period of time, and then allow me to use the B1 Gene Medicine right?" Li Yang had a hint of a smile on the corners of his lips.

The white-bearded elder nodded his head and said, "Right, I am extremely curious as to what will happen if the B1 Gene Medicine is used on one with an energy surpassing 100 crystals. Once it succeeds, how much would it improve one's physical body's energy?" While the white-bearded elder was speaking, his right hand pressed down on the button on his desk.

"Teacher, do you need something?" A youth looked at his teacher in reverence. He was quite clear that the gene medicine was developed purely by his teacher, and that him and the others were simply assisting him.

The white-bearded elder nodded his head and said, "Bring him to the second layer and let him train first." The white-bearded elder immediately turned around to face Li Yang. "You won't run right? There are only powerless scholars here who barely have the strength to feed chickens, so if you go mad, there really aren't many people who can stop you."

Li Yang Laughed in disdain. "I won't be that stupid. This base is

designed similarly to my Heavenly Net base in the past; both entering and exiting requires an iris scan. Without you guys, it is impossible for me to move a single step within this base." Although his mouth said those words, Li Yang was coldly laughing within his heart.

"Shitty old man, with such a classified area, the guards are most likely all at least fourth-level and fifth-level experts. Old bastard, you're even an expert that formed a golden dan. Barely able to feed chickens? Heng, however, if I really did run, you really can't do anything." If Li Yang were to run, then he would be depending on the escaping technique.

...

Li Yang followed that youth out of the white-bearded elder's office, but that white-bearded elder's phone suddenly rang from within his office.

"Wei, so it's General Wang ah, Li Yang? Haha, isn't it just another one on the death penalty, why are you so nervous. Since I requested for him to come here, you don't have to care anymore. Don't tell me you don't know the privileges the country have entrusted me with?" The white-bearded impatiently spoke into the phone.

The individual on the other end of the phone was indeed General Wang, and General Wang knew what the white-bearded elder did with those on death penalty. This was precisely why he became even more worried.

"Venerable Chairman, I only called to remind you that this Li Yang's temperament is not the same as in the past. I just worry that after taking the medicine, he will escape during a mission. After using the Gene

Medicine, Li Yang's physical body energy will greatly increase.

Added to his original internal energy as well as the "Xiao Li Flying Dagger", the power will become even more frightening. If the current him can easily kill fourth-ranked experts, then what about after Li Yang uses the Gene Medicine? I really cannot fathom what will happen after he loses control of himself!" General Wang reminded.

The white-bearded elder said with confidence. "Relax, what kind of methods do you think I am capable of? Has anyone on the death penalty escaped in the past? Haven't they all obediently carried out the missions one by one?"

"En, I know, however I still feel a bit uncomfortable. I just wanted to remind Venerable Chairman. Since Venerable Chairman has confidence, then I won't dawdle on groundless fears anymore." Shortly after, General Wang helplessly hung up the phone. Although that old chairman was extremely formidable in science, his temper was also extremely haughty. It might just be a eccentricity developed from his accomplishments.

The white-haired elder gently hung up the phone and laughed with confidence before saying in a low voice, "A little brat that hasn't even reached the Xiantian realm is going to be difficult to control? General Wang ah, how could you possibly know how powerful cultivators are?"

...

As days passed one after another, Li Yang continuously trained.

Biological Research Base number 2, within the biggest training room on the second floor.

“...479, 480...” Li Yang was doing frog jumps under four times gravity, and his hands were holding a 50 jin iron rod. Although it was only 50 jin, under four times gravity, it was extremely frightening.

Fortunately, Li Yang’s internal energy had already reached the third layer, and his several hundred crystals of internal energy had already made him much more powerful than in the past. Waves of internal qi operated within him, and under the operation of internal qi, although his whole body was covered in sweat, he still continued like before. Training like this, he killed two birds with one stone. Not only did he train his muscles, but his internal energy also improved rapidly.

“2000!” Li Yang violently tossed the iron rod in his hands aside, and walked towards the corner of the training room.

Li Yang was quite satisfied and sat down on the floor without any worries. With his body leaning against the ice cold wall, his seemingly exhausted internal energy began to frantically circulate, and the worldly spirit qi continuously rushed into Li Yang’s body. However, Li Yang truly did not care much about what was happening to his body.

A strong alcoholic drink was placed in the corner, and it was way stronger than the drinks he had back when he was a part of ‘Dragon Fang’. This was what Li Yang requested from the research institute, and fortunately, it was quite cheap so the base satisfied his request.

Li Yang twisted open the cap, and abruptly poured the strong drink into

his mouth despite the painful heat rushing through his chest.

"Xue, have you been well?" Li Yang's feelings for Xue were so deep that it allowed him to ignore the scorching heat. Day after day, other than training, Li Yang only trained some more. However, whenever he rested, he would immediately think of Xue. He would think back to the hospital where Xue would care for him in every possible way, and think about Xue who painfully waited for him, yet did not even know his real name.

Li Yang fiercely lifted his head and poured the rest of the contents into his mouth.

"Training!" Only training would numb himself, and Li Yang forcefully inhaled the worldly spirit qi, immediately circulating the internal qi within his body. Li Yang lifted up an enormous boulder and began to furiously train...

Hey guys,

After learning from Ren-sama last night, I realized that it was better to translate as many terms into english as possible.

Thus, several terms have been changed.

Yuanying Stage – Nascent Soul Stage

Dujie Stage – Tribulaton Stage

Dacheng Stage – Paragon Stage

Xiuzhenist – True Way Cultivator

Xiumoist – Devil Way Cultivator

If you guys still see any of the untranslated terms, please let me know!!!! Also there will be a PW chapter today to relieve that cliff :DDD

Time continued to flow by, and Li Yang was numbing himself by furiously training, endlessly training...

In the blink of an eye, Li Yang had already trained for over half a year.

Drip, drop! Sweat dripped from Li Yang's face, and the muscles on his body gave people an unreal feeling, as if it was vague and instinct. This was because Li Yang's internal qi and muscles had already completed resisted a huge amount of strength. Muscles covered the outside, internal qi hovered within, and sweat dripped down continuously...

"120!" Li Yang's hands lifted up a huge boulder, and continued to drop it before lifting it again. The muscles in his two arms bursted forth, and his two legs steadily formed the horse stance.

The weight of the huge boulder continuously pressed down against Li Yang's two arms, and even more so pressed down on Li Yang's legs that were holding the horse stance. Li Yang's muscles had already reached a formidable level of toughness, and it might have been due to the medicinal effects of the Essence Cleansing Dan from back them, assimilating with his muscles. The strength of Li Yang's physical body continuously improved, and the amount of training he did also increased. Li Yang's body continuously consumed his internal energy, and was at the same time continuously replenished it. He had already reached the peak of the third layer.

Li Yang attained the third layer realm, and was approaching the natural boundary. His level of harmonizing with spirit qi had already reached a

state where others would find it difficult to believe. In addition, Overlord Xiang Yu has been continuously helping Li Yang absorb the worldly spirit qi, and so for the current Li Yang, absorbing spirit qi was as easy as drinking water...

"Hah!" Li Yang suddenly shouted, and his two arms abruptly exerted some strength before throwing that huge rock on the side.

"Gulu gulu..." Li Yang lifted up the mineral water within the training room, and tilted his head, pouring the water into his mouth. Without stopping, the bottle of mineral water was completely finished.

His nearly exhausted internal qi began to frantically circulate. The worldly spirit qi began to pour into Li Yang's body as if it was just cheap water, and under the circulation of his internal qi, Li Yang's internal qi began to quickly recover. In addition, it was even a bit faster than in the past.

Test!

Li Yang casually grabbed a couple bottle of sorghum liquor, and he gulped down the strong alcohol before slowly walking out of the training area.

The number on the training area actually read '5'!

Under five times gravity, what did that hundred jin boulder represent? In addition, Li Yang still had to resist his own weight. If it was not for him frantically using his internal energy as support, it would be impossible for

Li Yang to resist with just his physical body. However, only by training in this way could he numb the pain of his lonely heart.

Testing area.

Li Yang opened the testing apparatus, and walked into the range of the system. The light rays immediately entered Li Yang's body, and after a while, the light radiance began to fade.

"1080 crystals!"

Li Yang saw this result, and slightly laughed before saying within his heart, "I have already reached the peak of the third layer in the 'Six Pure Yang' and my energy level has already reached roughly 1000 crystals; how much power exactly does my muscles have? It seems like it should have at least 100 crystals."

"Li Yang you little brat, your improvements over this past half year has really been quite great. According to the inspection of the Overlord's primordial spirit, your internal energy should be 950 crystals and your physical body should have reached 130 crystals. Aiya, even Overlord is shocked, the new technology is really incredible, to be able to even increase gravity. Formidable!" Xiang Yu's voice rang out within Li Yang's mind.

Li Yang slightly laughed, and within his heart, he said, "Overlord, these things don't matter that much as they only change the magnetic field. However, I am still confused. Although I trained like madman this past year, to be able to increase my physical body from 70 crystals to the 130 crystals now, isn't that still a bit too fast?"

Xiang Yu at this time began to laugh. "You brat, haha, who would train like you do? Under five-times gravity, logically, it shouldn't even be possible for you to train under such circumstances. However, you used your internal energy like you didn't care about your life. Fortunately, your ability to absorb worldly spirit qi was fast, and with Overlord's help on top of that, your internal energy was refilled quickly, allowing you to endure such consumption. Another point, the Essence Cleansing Dan is a legendary potion used by cultivators. Back then, the medicine simply entered your body, and only now through your training did you truly begin to utilize its effects. If it was not because of the Essence Cleansing Dan, there would be no way for you to improve so fast."

Li Yang slightly nodded his head, and immediately began to once again drink the strong alcohol before slowly walked towards the training area. He didn't know why but these past few days, no matter how much alcohol Li Yang drank, he would not get drunk. A huge pile of bottles have already accumulated in the corner of the training room, however, Li Yang had not gotten drunk yet.

That training area with five times gravity was where Li Yang lived and conducted his daily life. Even when he was sleeping, he would circulate his internal energy to contend against the weight of that huge boulder. Fortunately, he did not carry that huge boulder and only had to bear his own weight, which was something his internal energy was capable of handling.

The days passed one after another, and Li Yang's activities remained within that training room.

A week passed, and Li Yang was currently cultivating his internal energy

with his eyes closed. He was wholeheartedly cultivating internally, and his internal qi had increased by quite a bit.

"Hong long long" Wave after wave of internal qi frantically operated within Li Yang's body before flowing into his dantian shortly after. In the past, his dantian was like a bottomless pit, and now recently, his dantian finally appeared to be almost full. Waves of internal qi continuously gathered, and the internal qi within his dantian was continuously squeezed, continuously condensed...

Li Yang's recalled the chants for the Demonic Yang Law's fourth layer, which was also the Six Pure Yang's fourth layer chant. Li Yang used his mind to control the internal qi within his dantian and began to circulate it according to the designated locus...

Continuously compressing...

Continuously condensing...

Suddenly, a single drop of liquid formed, and soon after, drop after drop of 'liquid' began to form. This 'liquid' was formed from the compression of internal qi, and in the formation process, the drops of 'liquid' began to transform into a different type of internal qi.

This new type of internal qi was — Xiantian internal qi.

Houtian internal qi continuously condensed, and changed through the 'liquid' transformation into Xiantian qi. However, the speed of condensation far surpassed the rate of transformation into Xiantian qi, so

the amount of 'liquid' in his dantian was beginning to accumulate.

Suddenly, the Houtian internal energy finally completely transformed, and the 'liquid' in his dantian began to endlessly circulate like a nebula. The worldly spirit qi was continuously absorbed by him, and from this 'nebula' continuously flowed out Xiantian internal qi.

Six Pure Yang fourth layer!

Li Yang finally broke through the Houtian realm, and obtained the Xiantian realm!

Li Yang had a hint of a smile on his lips, and slowly opened his eyes. He casually grabbed at the alcoholic drink at his side, and with a thread from his finger, he easily popped the lid and poured the contents into his mouth.

"Indeed, using Xiantian internal qi to pop open the cap has way better results than using Houtian internal qi. Last time when I used Houtian internal qi, I had to try two or three times before succeeding!" Li Yang lowered his head while mumbling.

Testing area.

"1550 crystals!" Li Yang looked at the testing results with a slight smile on his face.

Xiang Yu's voice rang out from within Li Yang's mind, "Li Yang ah, you've just taken your first step into the Xiantian realm and have not yet completely consolidated your strength. That's why right now, your strength is only the lowest at 1000 crystals. In the future, you need to absorb more of the worldly spirit qi. With your absorption speed, compared to others who need seven or eight years to break through, you most likely will only need half a year to reach the fourth layer."

When Li Yang heard this, he simply smiled and said, "I understand. My original rate of absorbing worldly spirit qi is already faster than others by 10 times. With the Overlord's help, my absorption of the worldly spirit has already reached several dozen times that of others. However according to this idea, wouldn't it be rather quick for me to obtain the sixth layer as well?"

Xiang Yu immediately sneered. "You really are greedy like a snake trying to swallow an elephant. The sixth layer represents the golden dan forming realm, and it is what truly signifies a true way cultivator! The internal energy will change from Xiantian qi to demonic qi, and the gap between the fifth and sixth layer is an enormous gap. On the other hand, the fourth and fifth layer both uses Xiantian qi, which is the reason why you can breakthrough so fast. As for the sixth layer, without ten years, it is impossible to break through."

Li Yang stared blankly. "More than ten years?"

Xiang Yu explained, "Whatever, Overlord will still explain it to you in detail. The mortal realm is divided into the Houtian, Xiantian, Golden Dan, Nascent Soul, Tribulation, and Paragon stages! From Xiantian to Golden dan is a threshold, and from Golden Dan to Nascent Soul is another threshold. The hardest would be from Nascent Soul to Tribulation, as half of a cultivator's life would be spent on this stage."

Typically, true cultivators would need three or four hundred years.

The Tribulation stage is the shortest, as the beginning of the Tribulation stage is a preparatory stage lasting around ten years. The middle Tribulation stage is also known as the Heavenly Tribulation, and if you pass it, you pass it; if you fail it, then you fail it! After passing Tianjie, you will enter the late Tribulation stage, and your internal energy will transform from demonic energy to demonic yuan energy. Once you finish converting your energy to demonic yuan energy, then you will have reached the Paragon stage. At that time, you will simply waiting for your summon into the demonic realm.

After Li Yang heard this, he finally understood things regarding the world of cultivation. In the end, Li Yang was someone who simply took his first step into the world of cultivators. Even if he continuously worked hard, obtaining the Golden dan realm still remained a difficult task.

Suddenly, Li Yang spoke as if he did not mind at all, "Forget it, since I have the help of the Overlord, realized three realms already, and have such a fast worldly spirit qi absorption rate, I have already surpassed the people of the past. I believe that it will not be long before I obtain the Golden dan realm, so I can't be too greedy."

In reality, Xiang Yu wanted to crush Li Yang's self-confidence as he didn't want Li Yang to have too much pride and become too impetuous. With Xiang Yu's help, obtaining the Golden dan realm within ten years was still possible.

...

Li Yang continued to train like before, as that white-bearded elder still haven't allowed Li Yang to use the B1 gene medicine, and did not come to meet Li Yang.

Li Yang leaned back against the ice cold metal wall and numbed himself with the alcoholic drink. His internal energy was madly circulating...

"Li Yang, recently your Xiantian realm can be considered to have consolidated a bit, and Overlord has two small skills to pass on to you. Although these skills are not particularly great, they are still quite useful for you to preserve your life." Xiang Yu's voice suddenly sounded from within Li Yang's mind.

Li Yang raised his eyebrows, and immediately asked, "Small skills? What are they? Also, what are those great skills you are talking about?"

Overlord Xiang Yu arrogantly said, "Great skills of course refine the body. My devil cultivation prioritizes the body above all, and that immortal cultivation is the exact opposite, as all of them depend on methods and restrictions. Heng heng, those immortal individuals' bodies are all so frail. My great senior Chi You's physical body has reached an immortal state, and even if the immortal realm's three great Qing seniors took action, they would still not be able to inflict the smallest amount of harm to my great senior Chi You." Xiang Yu did not, however, talk about how although they couldn't injure him, they could still cooperate to use their restrictions to trap Chi You.

When Li Yang heard this, he couldn't help but laugh while saying, "Hoh, according to your words, wouldn't the devil realm easily exterminate the immortal realm?"

Xiang Yu replied in shock, "This... haha, it still cannot be said in this way. Senior level experts are all paragons without equal. The immortal realm has the three Qing seniors, and they have no way of dealing with great senior Chi You, while great senior Chi You also has no way of dealing with them since their level of restriction methods have already reached a frightening realm."

Li Yang suddenly replied in confusion, "Oh, this devil realm senior is only one person, so how can there be three in the immortal realm?"

Xiang Yu replied unyieldingly, "My devil realm of course also has three great seniors, however, my devil realm is quite different from that immortal realm. In my devil realm, it is simply the survival of the fittest, and the three great seniors represents three great powers. Li Yang, in the future, you will still be a subordinate of my great senior Chi You. Moreover, although the amount of time my great senior Chi You spent cultivation falls short of the other two, in terms of strength, he is definitely not inferior to the others!"

"Then what are the other two great seniors?" Li Yang was rather curious.

Xiang Yu impatiently said, "Don't ask anymore about the other two, as in the future, we will be enemies with them."

Li Yang suddenly thought of a question. "Overlord, between the devil realm and the immortal realm, which of the two is more powerful?"

When Xiang Yu heard this, he had to think for quite a while before replying, "If it was one-on-one long distance combat, with the immortal

practitioners' methods, of course immortal practitioners would have the advantage. However, if it was close combat, with our devil realm experts' powerful bodies, of course our devil realm would be stronger. If it was truly a large scale war, then our devil realm would definitely be more powerful. Our devil realm experts have all been brought up through battles, and although we aren't proficient in restrictions, we still know a bit about them. Pity, however, that our devil realm is struggling with internal strife, and so we have always been at an equilibrium with the immortal realm. Otherwise, heng heng, I won't say anymore. Right now, Overlord will pass on two small techniques to you. When the time comes, learn them."

"Learn, of course I will learn!" Li Yang immediately replied. How could overlord Xiang Yu's small techniques be considered normal skills?

Xiang Yu appeared quite pleased. "En, since it's like this, Overlord will pass them on to your mind. You should just go and slowly comprehend it. Although these are small techniques, you still need to cultivate them for a long time."

Immediately, Li Yang's mind suddenly rippled, and a large volume of chants appeared within his mind.

After a period of time, Li Yang felt that his mind had cleared by quite a bit. He immediately began to organize the two small skills bestowed upon him by Xiang Yu!

"Breath Restraint Technique, Escape Technique!" A smiling expression suddenly appeared on Li Yang's face. This 'Breath Restraint Technique' allowed one's traces to vanish, and prevent others from seeing them. This was definitely a precious treasure for assassins. This 'Breath Restraint

'Technique' at a shallow level could allow one to mask one's power, and once a deeper level was reached, one could completely conceal their existence.

However, the most shallow level of concealing one's strength could already be cultivated at the Xiantian level.

As for the Escape Technique, there was no need to say anything. Upon seeing the Escape Technique, Li Yang felt his heart move and asked Xiang Yu, "Right, that Japanese ninja seemed to also know a Escape Technique. Is this Escape Technique the same as the Escape Technique used by that ninja?"

Xiang Yu said in disdain, "Brat, that day when you defeated that golden-floral ranked ninja, Overlord saw everything clearly. That Escape Technique used by that ninja was the most basic and simple type. According to the Overlord's estimation, that ninja's shield technique should be that Kunlun Paradise five elements' most basic technique. Overlord's Escape Technique was seized from the Immortal Realm, and will naturally be stronger than that of the five elemental cultivator sect's canonical text. You actually compared that little ninja's shield technique to the one given to you by Overlord, heng, to not even think about Overlord's identity and status!" Xiang Yu was naturally annoyed. What kind of identity and status did he hold? How could the stuff he brought out be inferior?

Li Yang immediately laughed. "Overlord, don't be upset, I was simply asking." After speaking, Li Yang did not bother Xiang Yu again, and began to cultivate the two techniques that were superior to the Kunlun Paradise five elemental's senior canonical text alone!

Book 1 Chapter 18 [Pt. 1-2] – Dark Battle

Other than the Security Bureau 9th Division and 11th Division, the Security Bureau has one more power that not many people knew about. This power was the Security Bureau 13th Division.

The Security Bureau 9th Division and the 11th Division all practiced internal energy and made up the absolute force of the Security Bureau. In addition, this Security Bureau 13th Division was like an 'inconspicuous mountain that did not leak any water', and all of their members trained their physical bodies. Its members were all created from using the A1 and A2 gene medicines, and as for the A3 medicine, although they successfully developed it, its production costs were too high and was thus not used extensively.

Although the Security Bureau 13th Division had nearly 100 third-rank experts with powerful physical bodies, compared to Security Bureau 9th Division and 11th Division, the difference was still quite large. Now, however, the Security Bureau 13th Division did not receive any important tasks anymore, and this was due to the appearance of the B1 gene medicine changing everything.

Fourth-rank experts were still considered absolute experts even within the underground world, and were considered Xiantian level. Although this B1 gene medicine was extremely dangerous, the country only experimented on people who were on the death penalty. They would immediately wipe their memories following this and begin to brainwash and educate them, transforming them into unconditionally loyal warriors.

With the appearance of such fourth-ranked experts, this allowed the

Security Bureau 13th Division to greatly increase in status, making it almost equivalent in power to the 11th Division. After all, the amount of time those 11th Division Xiantian experts had to spend on cultivation was simply too long.

Within the short period of a year, the Security Bureau 13th Division already had more than 30 fourth-rank experts. Recently, however, the Security Bureau 13th Division slowed down its production of fourth-rank experts.

The production costs of this B1 gene medicine was equivalent to that of the A2 gene medicine, and each set of production amounted to roughly 1 million dollars. It was sold through back ends to America for 5 million, but that amount still could not be considered large. After all, for these things, profits would usually outweigh the production costs by ten-fold, yet currently the profits were only four-times. The mortality rate of the B1 gene medicine was also 90 percent, so while they did obtain 30 fourth-ranked experts, they also killed off almost 300 death penalty criminals. Killing off those individuals on death penalty wasn't a big deal, after all, they were going to die by the law anyway. However, at the same time, 300 units of the B1 gene medicine were consumed as well, wasting roughly 300 million dollars.

The country's total expenditure towards the Security Bureau was only several billion dollars. The majority was used on secret spy services, and although the efficacy of the Security Bureau was quite good, they were still only given 500 million dollars. The main function of the Security Bureau 13th Division was researching the life sciences, and the majority of the funds were used on researching. Typically, the research work would use up around two to three hundred million dollars. Because of this, the Security Bureau 13th Division could only produce thirty fourth-rank experts a year.

Because all of these fourth-rank experts depended on the powers of their physical bodies, the peaks of their powers were rather short and only lasted roughly 10 years. Because of this, the Security Bureau 13th Division could only have 300 fourth-rank experts at most during a single period of time.

However, the Security Bureau 11th Division had several dozen fifth-rank experts, and three to four hundred fourth-rank experts. The most important thing was that they were experts that cultivated internally, and so the higher their age was, the stronger their powers became as well. Some of the old farts that persisted on living even reached sixth-rank within Security Bureau 11th Division. This made it so that the Security Bureau 13th Division had to forcefully look for a way to break through, otherwise, it would be impossible for them to even be equal, not to mention surpassing the 11th Division.

The Chief Leader of the Security Bureau 13th Division was precisely the Old Chairman within the Biological Research Institute.

...

Within the office of the white-bearded elder.

"Heng, I don't believe that the Security Bureau 13th Division I founded is inferior to that old Zhang's 11th Division!" The white-bearded elder puffed his beard and scowled as he looked at the document in his hands; it was obvious that he was furious.

This document described the A-ranked and above missions carried out

by both the Security Bureau 11th and 13th Division, and it was obvious that the achievements of the 11th Division far surpassed that of the Security Bureau 13th Division's.

What kind of person was the white-bearded elder? He was an old fellow that lived almost a hundred years! He came from a true cultivator clan, and when he was young, he developed an interest in biological research. He wholeheartedly threw himself into this field, and it could be said that his passion made him 'neglected sleep and forget about food'. He had already reached the Xiantian realm when he was young, and so his body's quality was better than an ordinary individual's. Each day he would only need three hours of sleep, and after obtaining the Golden Dan, the need for sleep was reduced even more so. In regards to biological research, there really wasn't anyone in the world who could compare to him. After all, those biological science research students of the same era as him, Bai Yang, have already long passed away. Even if they were still living, they would all be eighty to ninety years old, meaning that their brains would no longer work like before. Only a true way cultivator like Bai Yang could become stronger as they aged and reach the point where they wouldn't even need to sleep for an entire day; a true way cultivator's mind was also definitely greater than that of a youngster's!

With his abnormal nature in researching for the country, how could the country's life sciences not reach the world's peak!

The A series gene medicine was indeed created by him, and later on America obtained a bottle of A1 gene medicine through some special methods. Following that, with two years of research, they also managed to reproduce it.

Now, Bai Yang learned his lesson, and made sure that he was the only one in control over the B1 gene medicine. Each time it was used on an

experimental subject, he would have to personally do it. That's why recently after other countries obtained information of the existence of B1, they sent out countless spies, however, none of them succeeded. After all, to seize the gene medicine from the hands of a true way cultivator, those hidden spies did not have that kind of strength. Before they could even draw near, they would already be noticed by the old Bai Yang.

"En, that test subject who originally had 30 crystals of power in his physical body obtained roughly 7000 crystals of physical body power. Would it be possible for someone who originally had over 100 crystals of energy to gain over 10,000 crystals of energy from using the B1 medicine?" Bai Yang was always thinking about the creation of a fifth-rank expert.

Since the number of experts created per year was now fixed, then the quality had to be improved! A fifth-rank expert's value would obviously far surpass that of a fourth-rank expert.

"That Li Yang trained for a year already, he should have surpassed a hundred crystals by now right?" Bai Yang rubbed his white beard, and immediately pressed the button on his desk. Soon after, a youth walked over.

"Teacher, do you need something?" The youth asked Bai Yang with veneration.

Bai Yang laughed lightly, and said, "Go bring Li Yang here!"

The youth's eyes immediately lit up, "Teacher finally decided to bring him back, this is too great. He will be the one with the highest physical

power thus far, but we can't be sure if he can surpass 10,000 crystals after using the B1 gene medicine. If he does surpass it, it would mean that we can produce fifth-rank experts!"

Bai Yang looked at his own student and smiled while nodding his head. "This represents the future of our 13th Division, hurry along!" Bai Yang began to feel a bit overwhelmed by his emotions.

They've been oppressed by the Security Bureau 11th Division for too long, and with Bai Yang's arrogance, how could he accept it? With hope appearing for the 13th Division, how could he not be excited? Although his expression was calm, it was simply because he was utilizing his true way cultivation.

...

"Li Yang, prepare yourself. Follow me to the base's third layer to undergo experimentation!"

Li Yang who was lying against the ice cold metallic wall was suddenly startled, and immediately had a smiling expression on his face. "It's been a year now. After waiting for a whole year, the time to use the gene medicine has finally come!" Li Yang threw the strong alcohol in his hands away, and slowly stood up...

"Li Yang, after not meeting for a year, your internal energy actually reached the peak of the third layer, not bad, not bad!" Old man Bai Feng rubbed his white beard with unspeakable satisfaction.

When Li Yang heard this, his heart immediately felt a bit of excitement. "Your Breath Restraint Technique really is quite formidable. By restraining my Xiantian Qi's breath, even this white-bearded old fart who is already a mid-stage Golden Dan can't see through it, formidable, formidable!"

Hearing Li Yang's praise, Xiang Yu said in disdain, "Heng heng, what kind of person is Overlord? That old man is simply someone who just stepped into the world of true way cultivators. The Golden Dan stage is actually the weakest stage of a true way cultivator. The two small skills given to you by Overlord were both obtained from the Immortal Realm; how could he possibly see through it."

During this pass year, Li Yang used roughly half the time to practice the Breath Restraint and Escape Techniques. However, when practicing the shield technique, he had Xiang Yu help him by using his primordial spirit to watch his surroundings. Li Yang did not want others to notice that he was practicing the Escape Technique, otherwise, he would be forced to leave and would not be able to use the gene medicine.

Li Yang suddenly felt worried. "Right, humans might not be able to see through my true strength, then will the testing center reveal it?"

Xiang Yu arrogantly replied, "Heng heng, science and technology on certain fields are quite amazing, however, it has not reached the level where even the secrets of the Immortal Realm could be seen through. This Breath Restraint Technique is based on the principle of 'A single grain of sand, an entire world', and it doesn't matter how unbound and vast your Dantian was. That's why on the aspect of masking your Dantian, you don't need to worry!" Xiang Yu was obviously rather confident.

The main reason was because Xiang Yu's primordial spirit was able to clearly feel the testing light-rays, and he knew the principle behind the testing apparatus' capabilities. Meanwhile, Li Yang did not truly understand it, and so that's why he was a bit worried.

"Li Yang, first come here to test your physical body's energy. Let's see how much you improved!" Old fellow Bai Yang said in expectation.

Li Yang nodded his head and said, "En, half a year ago, my physical body's energy had far surpassed 100 crystals. Recently, I have not tested what level I had reached."

When Bai Yang heard this, he immediately became a bit excited, "Ah, you already surpassed it half a year ago? This is simply too great! If I knew that you had already surpassed 100 crystals half a year ago, this old fellow would have already had you undergo the experiment. Good, come, let's first have you tested!"

There was a testing apparatus right inside old man Bai Yang's office. Although the white-bearded old man could use his spirit search to find out the other party's internal energy, he couldn't distinctly see through the other's physical power, after all, the muscles of the physical body wasn't something easily seen through using spirit search.

The white-bearded old man's right hand quickly pressed a few buttons before immediately turning around and smiled towards Li Yang. "Alright, I've already adjusted it so that it only measured your physical body's energy. Come, stand here!" While speaking, the white-bearded elder stood to the side, and Li Yang walked into the vicinity of the testing apparatus.

The light rays from the machine immediately covered Li Yang's body, and following that with a di sound, the testing machine's rays began to dim.

"180 crystals!" A electronic sound rang out.

Immediately, everyone there became dumbstruck, including Li Yang.

Li Yang's body a year ago had 70 crystals of physical body power, and half a year ago he had roughly 130 crystals of energy. Now that he had 180 crystals, according to reason, the longer you trained your physical body, the harder it became to train. However, Li Yang's training unexpectedly didn't slow down at all, and the most important point was that most of the second half of the year was used by Li Yang to practice the Breath Restraint and Escape Techniques. He did not take training his body nearly as seriously as during the first half, however, even though it was like so, the amount of energy his physical body currently had was still so astonishing.

"Li Yang, during the course of your training, your Xiantian qi has continuously provided moisture for your muscles and bones, allowing your physical body energy to increase rapidly!" Xiang Yu replied happily.

Li Yang also inwardly nodded his head, "It seems like this Xiantian internal qi is much more formidable than Houtian qi."

"Haha... good, since the heavens have helped you, I will as well. Li Yang you actually managed to reach 180 crystals in your physical body, it seems like the results of using the B1 gene medicine will be

unprecedented as well. Haha, this old fellow is even getting a bit impatient." Bai Yang seemed to be extremely excited, and immediately said to the youth next to him, "Hurry and prepare the experiment materials. Hurry up, I need to carry out the experiment at once."

Bai Yang's entire face was covered in red, and the light rays within his eyes flickered; it appeared that he was extremely excited. His gaze continuously observed Li Yang, and his expression became more and more brilliant.

...

An hour later.

Within an entirely sealed off room within the laboratory, there were three people; Li Yang, Bai Yang, and his assistant.

Li Yang frowned and looked at the 'experimental bed' in front of him. That was obviously a 'crystal coffin', or at least it had the appearance of a crystal coffin. Within here, there were quite a few nutrient fluids, and what upset Li Yang was that this 'crystal coffin' actually had handcuffs and leg-irons.

Bai Yang pointed at that 'crystal coffin' and proudly explained, "Li Yang, this is a new type of polymer material developed by my country. In terms of its hardness, it is quite close to diamond, and can definitely deal without any unusual occurrences. This nutrient fluid was actually something that I was hesitant in taking out, as it was the result of my most recent research, combining both western and traditional Chinese medicine. With this nutrient fluid, your chances of survival will be increased greatly. As for

other users, I have never used this type of nutrient fluid."

The assistant on the side also smiled and said to Li Yang, "The production costs for this nutrient fluid far surpasses that of the B1 gene medicine. Teacher was especially concerned for your sake!"

Li Yang showed appreciation on his face, but laughed coldly inside. "If you old fart didn't worry about me dying, this experiment on my physical body that surpassed 100 crystals would immediately be finished!"

"What purpose do these leg-irons and handcuffs serve?" Li Yang pointed at the handcuffs inside as he spoke.

Bai Yang replied while smiling, "I'll be frank with you, the effects of this B1 gene medicine is simply too powerful. When the gene medicine enters your body, all of the muscles and bones within your body will be stimulated. At that time, the pain inflicted on you will be intolerable. If not for the handcuffs and leg-irons holding you down, there might be a chance that you'll go crazy and destroy our entire base. That's why this 'laboratory bed' is made out of the precious new polymer material. I believe that with this degree of sturdiness, you won't be able to burst out.

Li Yang's eyes suddenly opened wide and began to curse within his heart, "Fuck, the preparations already came so far, then the pain caused by the gene medicine must be unimaginable."

How could Li Yang know that a large portion of the experimenters of the B1 gene medicine died simply from not being able to bear the pain. Their minds collapsed from the medicinal strength and passed away. This amount of pain could cause someone's mental state to completely

collapse, and one could imagine how much pain and suffering it caused.

"Hehe, Li Yang, why don't you go inside!" Old man Bai Yang was like a big bad wolf looking down on a little white sheep.

Li Yang immediately revealed a faint smile before taking off his clothes and entering.

"If the toughness of my mind can't even resist it, then I doubt that a single test subject before me succeeded!" Li Yang had complete confidence in the sturdiness of his mind.

Bai Yang glanced over at the assistant next to him, and the assistant locked Li Yang's two arms and legs in place before tactfully leaving the laboratory.

Bai Yang gave Li Yang a look, and the corners of his mouth revealed a cold laugh. "Just let me wash out the sins of your past!" Suddenly, streams of true yuan energy began to circulate around him, and Bai Yang's body began to slowly levitate. On his face were faint and indistinct rays of light, and with his two hands forming a technique, a profound seal began to appear around Bai Yang's body.

This seal was the character 'Soul'!

A bad omen suddenly alerted Li Yang within his heart, and Xiang Yu's voice also echoed through, "Li Yang, that old man is preparing to wipe out your memory."

Book 1 Chapter 19 [Pt. 1-2] – Supreme Expert

"You absolutely must not use Xiantian qi to defend your mind!" Xiang Yu reminded.

Li Yang immediately replied, "I understand what you are saying, since as soon as I try to resist, that white-bearded elder would definitely notice and refuse to let me use the medicine. However, if I don't resist, what would I have to do to retain my memory as well as avoid being discovered? Overlord, what do you think?" Li Yang's tone was rather strange, as he understood that there was a reason why Xiang Yu did not want him to resist. That Xiang Yu definitely had a method that didn't alarm Bai Yang and preserved his memory at the same time.

Xiang Yu replied in an arrogant manner, "Of course this matter is simple. As long as Overlord's primordial spirit wraps around your soul, no matter what that old fart does, heng heng. With that measly amount of power, it won't even be enough to shake Overlord's primordial spirit. As long as Overlord moves your energy a bit, it will make him think that his skill succeeded!"

Following that, Li Yang felt a stream of powerful energy encircle his consciousness.

...

Bai Yang's eyes suddenly opened, and a radiant light flickered. It seemed as if the entire laboratory was lit up, and Bai Yang suddenly coldly shouted with a sha sound.

That 'Soul' seal immediately rushed into Li Yang's body.

"Houtian brat, erasing your memories is simply too easy. If it was a Xiantian expert, then it would be difficult. Luckily, this brat only recently reached the peak of the Houtian realm and did not reach the Xiantian realm yet." Bai Yang muttered to himself while at the same time feeling Li Yang's internal situation. Suddenly, a wave of energy fluctuated, causing Bai Yang's face to reveal a smiling expression.

"Excellent, now I can let him use the B1 gene medicine!" Bai Yang took out a small case from his bosom, and within this case was a bottle of the B1 gene medicine.

...

"Overlord, is this energy wrapped around me your primordial spirit's energy?" Li Yang asked, as his consciousness was aware that there was a large and powerful stream of energy.

Xiang Yu proudly replied, "Of course, this is indeed Overlord's primordial spirit's energy. However, Overlord's current primordial spirit's energy is at its lowest state, and can't even be considered a thousandth of the past's amount." Xiang Yu was clearly pleased with himself, and made sure Li Yang knew how formidable he was in the past.

Li Yang was indeed shaken. If the current powerful and limitless power wasn't even a thousandths of what it was in the past, then how powerful exactly was Xiang Yu before?

"When would I be able to reach such a realm?" Li Yang sighed, and longed for the future.

Xiang Yu arrogantly said, "Heng heng, Li Yang you brat, you haven't even reached the Nascent Soul realm, yet you are thinking about the Primordial Spirit realm, you really are biting off more than you can chew."

"Nascent Soul? Primordial Spirit? What do these mean?" Li Yang was immediately confused.

TL: Nascent Soul is Yuanying and Primordial Spirit is Yuansheng in Chinese, so it's a bit confusing.

Xiang Yu explained, "No matter who it is, their most fundamental essence is still the soul, and the soul is separated into three grades. The first grade is your current state, and can be considered the mortal's 'consciousness', and your current soul doesn't have much power. However, with the increase of your cultivation, your soul will slowly grow stronger. Once you form the Golden Dan, your soul's energy will grow and develop the 'Spirit Knowledge'.

The second stage is precisely the Nascent Soul, and it is also the result of the transformation of the soul after obtaining the Nascent Soul realm. The Nascent Soul has the ability to absorb energy on its own, to the point of where it is capable of separating itself from the physical body. The 'consciousness' at your current level cannot separate from the physical body.

The last stage would be Overlord's current state, Primordial Spirit! The

Primordial Spirit can only be slowly formed after obtaining the Paragon stage. In addition, the Primordial Spirit will develop 'Divine Knowledge', and the power of the Divine Knowledge far surpasses that of the 'Spirit Knowledge'."

After Li Yang heard this, he immediately understood a lot more. Li Yang felt a shudder within his heart, and immediately asked, "Ah, Overlord, since you managed to cultivate the Primordial Spirit, why are you in currently in this realm? The Nascent Soul can absorb energy on its own, so why is it that Overlord doesn't absorb energy himself and then break through the void to enter the Devil Realm? Why is Overlord always within my mind? Could it be that I, Li Yang have some kind of attraction power?" Li Yang finally revealed the doubts within his mind.

When Xiang Yu heard this, he thought for a long time before saying, "Overlord's Primordial Spirit can absorb energy, however, Primordial Spirits should not exist in this realm. Upon reaching the Paragon stage, cultivators will begin to develop their Primordial Spirits, and the higher realms will notice. They will then be recruited into the higher realms, and this is the so called breaking the void. However, Overlord cannot appear in the outside realms right now."

"Why? Right, Overlord's primordial spirit's energy is only a thousandth that of the past, don't tell me that these are related?" Li Yang was startled and asked.

Xiang Yu sighed and replied, "Right, there was a great war, and it was a great war in the Mortal realm. Alas, if it wasn't for... forget it, even if I talked about it, you wouldn't understand. In short, I represented the Devil realm in that great war and lost, and that's why within the countless celestial bodies of the Mortal realm, earth is now a sovereignty under the Immortal realm. Once Overlord reveals himself, they will immediately

notice, and at that time, they will definitely chase me down and kill me. This is also the reason why Overlord doesn't absorb energy to improve my primordial spirit. Once Overlord's primordial spirit reaches the limit of the Mortal realm, they will also notice."

"This is why Overlord simply attached his primordial spirit to a stone, and never left it. Overlord's primordial spirit never dared to leave that stone. Later on, you wore that stone, and Overlord took that opportunity to enter your body. Within your mind, as long as Overlord doesn't breach the limit of the Mortal realm, it'll be impossible for the Immortal Realm to notice my existence. That's why Overlord can only depend on you, and hope that you can survive the heavenly tribulation. At that time, the Devil realm will automatically recruit you, and Overlord can also take the opportunity to enter together with you."

When Li Yang heard this, he became even more skeptical. "Since this celestial body is controlled by the Immortal Realm, upon passing through the tribulation, won't the immortal realm send someone to kill me, who is cultivating in the Devil's way?"

"Haha, Li Yang, this is where you are mistaken. Each realm indeed have their own agreements, however, when a mortal ascends, whether it is Devil, Immortal, Buddha, or Demon cultivation, they all cannot obstruct; this is a rule that every realm respects! However, Overlord cannot be classified as someone ascending, and that is why they will chase me down and kill me!" Xiang Yu said.

Li Yang asked suspiciously, "Oh, Overlord can't be considered someone that is ascending, so will it be possible to enter with me into the Devil Realm?"

"Of course, haven't you heard of the phrase 'chicken and dogs rise to Heaven'? As long as one person can ascend, he can bring with him others that haven't yet reached the Paragon level. Of course, this is on the premise that he can protect them. The amount of chaotic energy produced by piercing the void is not a small amount." Xiang Yu, leaving Li Yang completely gobsmacked.

When one person ascends, 'chicken and dogs rise to heaven' as well; there actually was such a saying!

"Ah!" Suddenly, a wave of violent pain shook Li Yang to his very soul.

What was going on?

This was because the gene medicine already entered Li Yang's body...

Upon entering the body, the gene medicine will transform into a black energy, and the black energy will madly storm through Li Yang's entire body. His entire body will be catalyzed, and it will continuously undergoing transformation as well as increase in strength.

The improvement of muscle strength should be step by step, however, this gene medicine clearly wanted to succeed in one go and increase the strength of his muscles in a short period of time.

Although it was like this and the improvement speed of his energy was increased, the severe pain and suffering that accompanied these effects were simply intolerable for Li Yang. That pain completely penetrated his bone marrow and provoked his muscles to the point that even the cells

were stimulated!

Pain, so much pain within the nerves. Even the soul was largely impacted!

"Resist!" Li Yang persevered within his heart...

"Motherfucker, this isn't some normal pain!" Li Yang clearly felt his own cells popping and new ones appearing before once again popping... His muscles and bones all began to tremble, and his entire body was undergoing transformation...

Black colored energy rushed everywhere. Muscles, bones, meridians, each and every area experienced transformation. This type of transformation caused pain; pain that penetrated the soul!

Each second, each blink of an eye!

Time dragged on, and Li Yang finally understood what 'a day drags past like a year' meant.

Ancient people had the 'dividing muscles and repressing bone' method, and under the 'dividing muscles and repressing bone', no matter who it was, they would all suffer pain as if they were hovering between life or death!

However, the current pain Li Yang dealt with far surpassed that of the 'dividing muscles and repressing bone', as the 'dividing muscles and repressing bone' only forcefully caused the muscles and tendons outside

the bones to exert pressure. However currently, that frightening black colored energy completely penetrated the inside of the bones, and provoked the muscles and bones from the inside. This type of pain was simply unfathomable If one never previously exposed oneself to this type of suffering.

Wave after wave of trembling, a trembling of the soul!

"I finally understand why there are some test subjects that could not bear the brutality of this experiment and had their minds collapsed!" Li Yang could unexpectedly still think, and could reflect on such a problem! One needs to understand that all of the other succeeding members of this experiment were in a fainted state at this point. From this, it was also clear just how much stronger Li Yang's mental constitution was than others.

"Li Yang, do you want Overlord to take action and help you? It's quite easy. Overlord just needs to slightly control the medicinal strength and make it disperse a bit slower. It'll be a lot more bearable for you!" Xiang Yu said in this way.

Li Yang coldly and arrogantly replied, "Don't worry, if I can't even bear this small amount of pain, how can I, Li Yang, have any future prospects? This pain is simply cultivating my mental fortitude. Moreover, by decreasing the medicinal strength, won't the experimental time increase?"

When Xiang Yu heard this, he immediately said, "Ah, indeed, if Overlord slows down the medicinal effects a bit, then the experiment will be a bit longer. However, Overlord still has a different method. I can seal off your soul from your physical body, and make it so that you cannot feel your

physical body's pain. At that time, your soul wouldn't feel any trembling, and there wouldn't be any problems either."

This was indeed a good method, as severing the connection between the soul and the physical body would make it so that the soul wouldn't suffer any sort of disturbance. Ordinary people would find it impossible to separate their soul and body, and only after obtaining the Nascent Soul realm could they discard their physical bodies and exist on their own. However, by using his Primordial Spirit, Xiang Yu was capable of making this happen.

"No need! I can bear this small amount of pain!" Li Yang's voice was grim, and the tremble in Li Yang's voice obviously could not avoid Xiang Yu's detection. With even his voice shaking, it was obvious that it wasn't just some 'small pain' as Li Yang claimed.

Si si~~~

Suddenly, waves of green colored energy permeated into the skin.

This green energy was refreshing and comfortable. To a certain extent, it was similar to the energy from the Essence Cleansing Dan, however, the essence wasn't as pure as the Essence Cleansing Dan. Once this green colored energy entered Li Yang's body, it was immediately absorbed by the transforming muscles and bones.

Hu! A wave of strong and comfortable feeling completely relaxed Li Yang's soul, and this was a light and airy feeling.

"This is probably the feeling those heroin users feel!" That green energy made Li Yang, who was previously immersed in suffering, feel much more comfortable.

Ah! Suddenly, a wave of even stronger pain shook his mind, and Li Yang was in even more pain than before.

The pain from the beginning had already reached his limit, and made Li Yang suffer so much that he became numb. However, once this green colored energy entered his body, the sharp contrast between the comfortable feeling and the painful feeling made Li Yang understand what pain and suffering really was.

This was similar to placing one's hands within ice cold water. Although the cold from freezing your hands until they became numb was painful, it was still bearable. However, if you then took those numb hands and placed them inside boiling water, then that feeling... this is a frank representation of what was happening!

Li Yang was currently undergoing a similar set of circumstances. That gene medicine's pain was like the ice water, freezing him until he became numb, and that green energy was like the boiling water. Although it was rather comfortable in the beginning, the powerful contrasting pain became even more powerful as a result.

Bai Yang was currently looking at Li Yang who was within the 'crystal coffin'. His body was continuously shaking, and those handcuffs and leg irons endlessly groaned. The surface of his skin was a blood red, and blood trickled out from the surface of his skin...

Portion after portion of the precious 'nutrient fluid' also penetrated Li Yang's body. That green colored energy was precisely this nutrient fluid's energy.

"Although this 'nutrient fluid' isn't as great as the results of the Essence Cleansing Dan, it can still allow Li Yang that brat to feel a bit of comfort. He should be able to bear this type of pain right?" Bai Yang was feeling rather complacent, and he thought that his 'nutrient fluid' would give the results of this experiment even more assurance. However, he could not possibly understand that Li Yang was undergoing even more pain...

Hou!

An overcast hou sound rang out from within the depths of his throat as it penetrated the 'crystal coffin'. Soon after...

Peng. Peng.

Bai Yang's eyes were as round as balls, and Li Yang actually caused the handcuffs and leg irons that were made out of the same materials as the experimental bed to snap apart.

Ah!

Suddenly, Li Yang painfully shouted, and his two fists furiously bashed the bed's covering, or in other words, the cover of the 'crystal coffin'! Of course, that lid was firmly fastened to the bed of the crystal coffin. However, under the pain that Li Yang was suffering from, it enabled him to display an excessive strength. It unexpectedly smashed open the

cover, sending it flying.

Bai Yang's eyes suddenly lit up. "Ah, breaking free from those handcuffs and leg irons and even sending the lid flying. You have to understand that these materials were all made from recently developed polymers. From previous tests, only a Xiantian expert with over 30,000 crystals of energy were able to succeed in destroying it! It seems like the experiment is going to succeed!"

Li Yang looked like a divine warrior as he stood there, and that cover was already blasted into a corner of the room. However currently, Li Yang actually had his eyes closed...

At the moment, Li Yang was feeling out the powerful energy within his body's muscles. Suddenly, his face revealed a smiling expression. Just now, in a split second, his suffering momentarily increased by several folds. The intense pain caused Li Yang to madly explode with his powerful potential, actually breaking apart the handcuffs and leg irons that were binding him in place.

Now, Li Yang was clear-headed, and the pain that suddenly spiked by several folds faded away. The first thing the current Li Yang wanted to do was sense his post-transformation body.

What kind of feeling?

Powerful!

Valiant!

Tyrannical!

Li Yang's smile became even more brilliant. He was now confident that even if a huge boulder were placed in front of him, he would be able to shatter it purely by using his physical strength.

Stream of light rays covered Li Yang's body, before disappearing soon after.

"15,800 crystals!"

Li Yang stared blankly. Appearing in front of him was a white-bearded old man that was wild with joy, and it was that white-bearded elder that held the testing apparatus in his hands.

Hong! The excited Bai Yang threw the testing apparatus to the ground, and shouted loudly, "Fifth-rank expert, fifth-rank expert ah, success! Haha... I succeeded, I finally succeeded!"

Hey guys I have some news for you guys.

First of all, I screwed up. Dun Shu is actually Escape Technique, not Shield Technique. The two have the same pronunciation and I had a brain fart. This means that Li Yang was practicing the Escape Technique during the latter half of his year of training in the 13th Division base.

Shield Technique -> Escape Technique.

Next is that this is the first part of the last chapter of Book 1! I have not read ahead, as I generally read while I translate (creating these mishaps sorry), but I am sure that it will be noteworthy. After the last chapter of Book 1 has been published, I will go back and edit the entire book to make sure that it reads smoothly, as I now have a better understanding of what is going on.

Ripper Note:

All past chapters, are edited and changed!

Book 1 Chapter 20 [Pt. 1-2] – A Small Splash in a Large World

Li Yang looked at the excited white-bearded elder and asked stupidly, "Who am I? Who are you?"

When Bai Yang saw Li Yang's blank expression, he immediately nodded his head in satisfaction. He knew that he had already completely wiped Li Yang's memory, and so Bai Yang replied, "You are an orphan, a child fostered by the country!" Bai Yang suddenly retrieved a phone from his pockets and said, "Yu, come quickly, there's another new assignment for you."

Soon after, the laboratory door opened, and in walked a rather classy middle aged woman.

"It's another child who lost his memory." Wang Yu saw Li Yang who currently had a vacant expression on his face. She released a forced smile, and she clearly understood what really happened. These test subjects were all individuals on the death penalty, so being able to undergo rebirth was already quite good.

"Don't worry elder Bai. I will take care of him from twelve to three, and after a month, a new Li Yang will appear in front of you," said Wang Yu with confidence.

Bai Yang nodded his head, and he felt at ease. After all, all of those on the death penalty that he wiped the memories of had been taken care of by Wang Yu, and she was the one in charge of reeducating them.

Bai Yang shifted his gaze over to Li Yang, and it looked as if he was admiring a perfect work of art. Only after a period of time did he sigh and say, "I finally succeeded, 15,800 crystals. Although he has just entered the doorstep of fifth-ranked experts, it is still quite excellent."

Although 15,800 crystals might sound amazing, upon being compared to the members of the 11th Division, it no longer holds much significance. Any random fifth-ranked expert within the 11th Division would have several tens of thousands crystals of Xiantian internal qi. Li Yang's former captain Meng Tian's energy already surpassed 50,000 crystals of Xiantian internal qi, amounting to over three times that of Li Yang's.

"Yu, you should lead him away. Remember to bring him later to the training facility. I don't believe 15,800 crystals is his limit." After speaking, he happily looked at Li Yang.

...

Li Yang still wore that expression as if he still held no memories. From Wang Yu's place, he learned that his name was 'Li Yang'!

...

Within the training facility.

"Heng heng, they really didn't show any skepticism at all and even told me my real name." Li Yang casually brandished a large boulder. Even though the gravity was set to '10', to the current Li Yang, 10 times gravity

wasn't a big deal.

To surpass ten thousand crystals in purely physical body power, what kind of concept was this?

At the very least, the underground world did not have such a frightening person yet. Other than those who utilized the B1 gene medicine, the one with the most powerful physical body would be the Underground Boxing Arena's 'Devil King', and this 'Devil King' represented the number one figure of the Underground Boxing Arena. His physical body power was merely a bit over 1,000 crystals, and the most he could lift up was around 1,000 jin. Li Yang was stronger than him by ten times, and even had the assistance of his internal qi. Even if it was under 10 times gravity, that boulder was still roughly 2,000 or 3,000 jin, and his body was merely about 2,000 jin. For him, this was really just playing around.

(IET carefully explains a bit about the strength of the underground boxers: Underground boxers who haven't yet used the A1 gene medicine would have about 200 crystals of energy. Of course, rumor has it that the highest was about 500 crystals, and the lowest was about 100 crystals. This 200 crystals was obtained painfully through training, and the average level athlete would squat with about 500 kilograms as well as bench press 150 kilograms. Once they successfully used the A1 medicine, their energy would be around 900 crystals, and they will be able to squat 900 kg and bench press 300 kg. After all, after squatting 500 kg, every increase in weight will require double the energy counterpart. After using the A1, although one's energy will increase close to about four times, only being able to double the amount one can squat was still considered normal. The work put into lifting a boulder is roughly the same as bench pressing. Devil King is the best of the best among the boxers, and before using the A1, his energy was already close to 500 crystals. After using it,

he had more than 1000 crystals of energy, and his energy far surpassed that of regular athletes. As expected, he could bench press way more than an ordinary athlete could, and reached 500 kg. This was why he was able to lift up 1000 jin weight.)

"Overlord, do you reckon that it's time to leave? I have already used the B1 gene medicine, and obtained my objective. What is the point of staying here any longer?" Li Yang asked Xiang Yu.

When Xiang Yu heard this, he immediately said, "Sure, Overlord has already waited for this day for a long time. Just use the Escape Technique that you learned to leave. Haha, I wonder what kind of expression that old fart will have when he discovers that you suddenly vanished?"

When Li Yang thought of this, he also began to happily laugh. "That white bearded old man actually wanted to wipe my memory. Heng heng, now that I'm leaving, you really can't blame me!"

"Escape!"

Li Yang's hands produced the method's seal, and the Xiantian qi began to circulate within his body. Immediately, his figure merged with the training room's metallic wall before disappearing.

...

Li Yang's speed could not be considered fast, and he carefully felt the relaxed feeling that the Escape Technique brought him.

Li Yang's body penetrated through the base, and he continued to move forward. Ahead of him was an endless amount of dirt, and although there were some rocks within the dirt, Li Yang passed through it all in one go.

"Overlord, this Escape Technique really is fantastic. Haha, it really can escape from everything!" Li Yang was evidently excited.

Xiang Yu said replied, "Heng heng, Li Yang you brat. The Escape Technique you learned is from the Immortal Realm, so of course it is comfortable. Do you know about the Escape Technique from the Kunlun Paradise Five Sect? That one requires close attention to the five elements. In the face of earth you need an earth escape and in front of metal you need a metal escape, making it extremely inconvenient. During the course of the escape, you can't even move too fast. For example, if a rock appears in the middle of the dirt, then you need to avoid it, otherwise, you need to change to the metal escape. After passing the stone, you then need to switch back to earth escape. If a river appears, then you need to switch to water escape..."

When Li Yang heard this, his head immediately became as big as a cow's. If the Escape Technique was that difficult, he really would go crazy.

Xiang Yu arrogantly replied, "Hehe, do you now know how fortunate you are? Wasn't all of this given to you by Overlord? Immortal Realm's Escape Technique? How many people within the Mortal Realm can learn this? Right, Li Yang, quickly pick a place to exit. Your Escape Technique won't last much longer. Sigh, your strength is too weak!"

Li Yang also felt that his Xiantian qi was getting consumed quickly, and it was leaking out at a crazy speed as if it were a tire with a hole in it. Luckily, Li Yang's restoration speed of Xiantian internal qi was also quite

abnormal, and that was why he was able to keep it up for more than ten minutes.

"Alright, right above us is good. It's a small alleyway, and there aren't many people!" Xiang Yu reminded him on the spot.

Li Yang immediately felt moved, and his body directly passed through the earth and arrived on the surface.

"Haha, Overlord, I finally escaped. This Escape Technique really is amazing as expected! However right now, I have an extremely important task to take care of." Li Yang looked at his naked upper body and bitterly laughed within his heart. Within the training room, he really did not mind being half-naked, but after coming out, he really could not look like this. Buying clothes was his most important task right now, but currently, he did not have a single cent on him. What was he supposed to do?

Book 1 Chapter 20 Pt. 2 – A Small Splash in a Large World

How do I buy clothes if I don't have money? I can't just charge into a shopping mall while half naked right? The distressed Li Yang looked around in all four directions, and suddenly his eyes lit up. Li Yang stared straight at the area above his head.

This small alleyway was surrounded both sides by residential houses, and since they were residential houses, there were many clothes that were left out to dry. Li Yang was indeed looking at these clothes that were hanging above his head.

"Hehe, this family it is!" Li Yang looked at the clothes on a second floor balcony and laughed. He gathered a stream of Xiantian qi and immediately released it, easily removing a shirt and a pair of pants. To use Xiantian Qi to retrieve some clothes, it really is using talent for insignificant things.

Li Yang looked at the army pants he was wearing. During his crazy training, it was still these army pants that were the most comfortable. However, if he wore this on public streets, it would still be a bit weird. Li Yang immediately changed into this 'borrowed' set of clothes.

"My insight is still not bad, it fits perfectly!" Li Yang faintly smiled, and immediately calmly walked out.

...

"Wei, brothers, this month's protection fees haven't been paid yet!" An large individual who was rather intrepid had both his arms exposed, and he was currently howling outside the entrance of a small restaurant.

From within the restaurant immediately walked out a chubby forty or fifty year old man who had a belly sticking out. When the fat man saw the big person, he immediately yelled out, "Ah, isn't it brother Yang? Come, come, come, whatever you want to eat, just say it. There's no need to be anxious about the protection fee, after eating, bring brother Yang up. I guarantee that brother Yang will be extremely comfortable.

When brother Yang heard this, his face immediately revealed a smiling expression. Under the lead of the fat boss, he walked towards the

restaurant.

"Wei, brother Yang, slow down!"

Suddenly, an amiable shout was heard. When this brother Yang heard such a familiar shout, he immediately turned around to see who it was and wondered if it was a brother that he associated with before.

"You are?" Brother Yang seemed a bit confused as he looked at the man in front of him. During the course of his life, he's made many brothers, and many of them he really could not recall. However, after looking carefully at the person in front of him, it seems that he really has met him before. Unfortunately, no matter what he did, he couldn't quite remember who it was.

The person in front was indeed Li Yang, and he had a smiling expression as he patted brother Yang's shoulder familiarly. "We previously drank together. You can't remember?"

Brother Yang was the type of person to drink everyday, and the brothers he had were obviously all met through drinking. When Li Yang said this, brother Yang became even more muddle-headed...

"Can't remember? Sigh, luckily I still remember brother Yang, as brother Yang doesn't even remember me!" Li Yang looked brother Yang in the eye, and he seemed to looked extremely disappointed. Of course, this situation was played out in front of that fat boss.

From brother Yang's perspective, Li Yang's eyes seemed like a

bottomless pit, and waves of dizziness stormed his mind.

Li Yang looked at the expression of the large man in front of him, and slightly smiled. The current Li Yang who had an even stronger mind easily applied his hypnotism.

"Brother Yang, let this brother use your cell phone for a bit!" Li Yang's smile seemed extremely friendly. The brother Yang who was already successfully hypnotized absent-mindedly took out his cellphone, and placed his cellphone into Li Yang's hands.

Li Yang immediately dialed his own brother Li Shuo's number. "Wei, Shuo, it's me! I'm here right now, so quickly send some people here!" The cellphone's gps will easily allow Li Shuo to find out his current location.

"Hey, brother Yang, this brother here is waiting for someone!" Li Yang returned the cellphone to the brother Yang who just came out of hypnosis. However, the current brother Yang was still in a daze, and there were still some aftereffects from the hypnosis, so he obediently listened to Li Yang's words and entered the restaurant.

Li Yang returned to the alleyway, and waited for Li Shuo's arrival. Right now, he could only depend on his brother.

Five minutes, merely five minutes later!

A black limousine parked itself in front of Li Yang, and a familiar figure immediately rushed out.

"Brother!"

Li Shuo was happy beyond belief, as for an entire year, he used every method possible to find information regarding Li Yang. Only later after contacting people from the military did he obtain some information, and by then Li Yang had already undergone the secret trial and given the death penalty.

This news tormented Li Shuo, making him go mad. Ever since he was young, him and Li Yang mutually depend on each other for survival, and although they had a mother, she was a workaholic and buried herself within her work. She rarely interacted with her children, and under such circumstances, the two brothers lived together for 16 years, making their relationship extremely close. They were equally patriotic, and they both equally wanted to contribute towards their country. However, Li Shuo entered through the dark route, while Li Yang entered the army.

"Shuo!" Li Yang suddenly embraced his brother.

Suddenly, Li Shuo's expression flickered as he looked at his surroundings before saying to Li Yang, "Bro, let's return and then talk." Soon after, he lead Li Yang into the car, and drove away...

...

Around eight in the evening.

Within Biological Research Institution number 2.

"Li Yang, this is your dinner tonight... Li Yang, Li Yang!" A white clad research member looked at the completely vacant training room and stared with wide eyes.

...

"What! Li Yang disappeared?" Old man Bai Yang looked at the research member in front of him and yelled loudly.

Even though Bai Yang has already nearly 100 years in age, while shouting with such wide eyes, it was still gave quite a frightening scare.

"It's true, I looked everywhere, I looked through the entire second floor and couldn't find him. Should we completely search the first and third floor as well?" That research member also appeared to be rather anxious, after all, among the research member who participated in the development of the gene medicine, who didn't know how important Li yang was? This was the first one that successfully turned into an expert who surpassed 10,000 crystals.

"Idiot, this entire base is completely based off an iris scan system. How could Li Yang enter the first or third floor!" Bai Yang loudly reprimanded.

The research member immediately became quiet out of fear.

"However if he couldn't leave the base's second floor, why can't we find him within the second floor?" After a long time, the research member gathered the courage to speak out.

When Bai Yang heard this, he immediately became stunned. Right, if he couldn't leave the second floor, why couldn't they find him? Bai Yang immediately ordered, "Immediately search the first and third floor. Order all of the research personnel to participate in this search. Search carefully, you all must find where he is!"

Seeing the research member leave while scared witless, Bai Yang became even more irritated. Bai Yang fiercely slapped himself in the head. "Ah, I was so worried that I became muddled. Wouldn't it be fine as long as I use Spirit Knowledge?" Of course, the results of the white elder was obvious.

From this day forth, all of the members of Biological Institution base number two will always be confused, and will be confused to their death. How exactly did this Li Yang escape this base?

...

"Bro, this was delivered from that Meng Tian saying that you were sacrificed for our country. That's why he gave all of your assets over to me." Li Shuo handed over a gold card over to Li Yang.

Li Yang received it, and immediately replied, "Shuo, have you finished preparing that ID card I wanted for the flight to New York?"

New York, the center of the world, was at the same time the central location of the Underground Boxing Arena. In addition, this was also the underground world power's most central location. Li Yang's plan for vengeance's first step was precisely New York.

When Li Shuo heard this, he immediately took out from his bosom a plane ticket as well as a new ID card and was prepared to give it to Li Yang. Right when Li Yang was going to receive it, Li Shuo immediately pulled it back, and once again advised, "Bro, are you really going to New York? Forget about it, how can you possibly exterminate the Holy Forest Group alone? It's still better to first become a member of my Hong Mercenaries. Afterwards, by us brother joining hands, we can use the strength of the Hong Mercenaries, one of the five great criminal organizations. With this, we'll have a chance of eliminating Holy Forest Group. By yourself, just how difficult would that be!"

Li Yang lightly laughed. "Shuo, things are only interesting when there's a challenge. Moreover, exterminating that Holy Forest Group in one go would still be letting off that Lin Tianyu too easily. I need to slowly torment him, and destroy him step by step. I want him to experience despair, and make him live but rather die. Only like this would the hate within my heart be settled." Li Yang's eyes appeared to be made out of a cold radiance, and it was heart trembling.

"I'm flying out tomorrow morning. Right now, us brothers should happily drink. Sigh, don't be like this, alright alright. I'll promise you, when brother fails, then Shuo can use his Hong Mercenaries' strength to help me. This should be enough right?" Li Yang laughed while speaking.

Only after hearing this was Li Shuo satisfied.

"Come, drink!" Li Yang and Li Shuo, two brothers, happily began to drink. They completely forgot about the thought of having to separate tomorrow.

The sea is large enough for a fish to leap in, and the skies are vast

enough for birds to fly. What type of foul winds and bloody rain would the unrestricted Li Yang now bring forth to the world's central underground power, New York?

Book 1 officially End!

Book 2 Chapter 1 Pt. 1 – Underground Boxing Arena

John F. Kennedy International Airport, exit lobby.

A short haired, black-clad youth was currently dragging his luggage down the lobby. The youth's upper body was wearing a sleeveless and black skin-tight sport vest. His distinct pectoral and abdominal muscles matched his nearly perfect figure, and all the girls within the vicinity could not help but cast their gazes in his direction.

This was Li Yang.

Li Yang had changed. He trained like a madman within that Biological Research Facility for a year, and together with the changes the B1 gene medicine brought to his body, Li Yang's facial shape became even more firm. However, what became more firm and persistent was not just his face structure, but also his emotion and temperament! Xue's departure might be what caused Li Yang to truly mature, and this made Li Yang transform into a true man. This transformation was a transformation of the soul, and this was what resulted in Li Yang's current temperament.

Li Yang's hairstyle also changed, and his original brilliant and unique long hair was cut into short hair, and it was a short hairstyle that was barely an inch long! The inch long hair matched Li Yang's firm facial shape as well as his robust and nearly perfect body. This would definitely make countless girls shriek, however within the airport, not a single woman approached him!

This was due to his aura, an ice-cold aura that spread out and repelled those around him. That black colored sport vest as well as the black

trousers covered him entirely in black, allowing the ice-cold aura to proliferate even further.

"Drive to Manhattan 57th Street!" Li Yang used English when he spoke to the driver. During those years when he was a top-notch expert within the elite special forces 'Dragon Fang', he became extremely proficient in both weapons of high technology as well as English.

When the driver heard this, he immediately opened his eyes wide as he stared at Li Yang. He was not startled due to Li Yang's proficiency in English, as there were many people who spoke English well in New York. He was shocked because of the place Li Yang spoke.

Manhattan 57th Street!

Manhattan 57th and 58th street were definitely New York's most dangerous areas, and even the police did not dare to arrest anyone on those two streets. More than half of New York's yearly fatal cases happened on these two streets.

"Sir, do you understand what kind of place that is? If you are a tourist, I still advise you not to go there. There are many other places in New York to have fun, for example Broadway, Metropolis Opera House, as well as the art gallery, and many others. You can also go to Chinatown to have some Dim Sum, as it is quite excellent there. At night, you can go to 5th avenue or 42nd street to enjoy the nightlife." The driver was like a tour guide, and wanted to introduce New York a bit to him."

"Don't worry, I know what kind of place Manhattan 57th street is. Isn't it just slightly dangerous? Don't worry, just go!" Li Yang lightly laughed as

he spoke.

When the driver heard this, he nodded his head. "Oh! If Sir already understands, then I won't waste your time with useless words any longer." The driver immediately drove the taxi cab towards their destination.

Why were Manhattan's 57th and 58th street so dangerous?

The reasoning behind this was because these two streets were both known as the 'Boxer Streets'. All of the greatest international boxers all resided here, and although all of the boxers' strength were rather valiant, they had rather bad tempers. That's why whenever there was a dispute, manslaughter wouldn't be too uncommon.

New York is the economic center of the United States, and at the same time, it is the economic center of the world. New York's has five boroughs: Manhattan, Brooklyn, Bronx, Queens, and Staten Island. Within those five, Manhattan is the smallest at barely 50 square kilometers, and it can't even compare to a small village in China. However, this small Manhattan nevertheless represents the heart of New York with its great banks, great insurance companies, great industry companies, as well as the world renown New York Stock Exchange as well as many others. Among these, Wall Street is even more so one of America's financial tycoon representative.

However — not only is Manhattan the economic center, but at the same time, it is also the most concentrated area of international underground activities.

Central Park, America's central park covers an area of more than 40

hectares. Everyone knows what central park is like on the outside, however, how many people knew about what went on under it?

Underneath Central Park was a 30 hectare area of land occupied by the general headquarters of the Underground Boxing Arena!

Indeed, the well known Central Park, the symbol of New York, the emblem of America — Underneath Central Park was actually the general headquarters of the Underground Boxing Arena, and the area where dark forces had their fun. While countless tourists are enjoying Central Park, how could they possibly have imagined that there were actually innumerable experts battling it out in ways that they've only seen in movies?

This wasn't all that strange, as the people behind the Underground Boxing Arena were from the Five Great criminal organizations. They were people from the American mafia as well as the the Green Mercenaries which had experts as common as the clouds.

The five great criminal organizations are separated into the American's Chinese Green Mercenaries, American Mafia, Asia's Hong Mercenaries and Mountain Pass group, as well as Europe's Italian Mafia! Within these five, the American Mafia were originally members that split off from the Italian Mafia, and that was why the Italian Mafia always felt hostility towards the American Mafia.

...

At the time Central Part was being constructed, the Underground Training Arena opened up at the same time. With the influence of the

Green Mercenaries and American mafia inside of the Senate and the House of Representatives, as well as the fact that America being a capitalist country, many great capitalists were influenced by these two great criminal organizations behind the scenes. For them to construct an Underground Boxing Area underneath Central Park was not a difficult task at all. (IET: I want to remind you guys again that this is a Xuan Huan novel, and therefore everything is fictitious. Please do not run to America's Central Park to look for experts! Haha...)

Manhattan's 57th Street.

Li Yang walked into the residential area of 57th street. Of course, all of the houses within Manhattan's residential area were luxurious villas, and each and every one of them held terrifying prices values.

"En, this one right here!" Li Yang looked at the villa in front of him, and it was the one that was a bit more luxurious compared to the dozen surrounding it. According to Li Yang's estimations, without several million dollars, it wouldn't be possible to own such a place. This still wasn't considered that expensive, as the same villas on 5th street would go for 40 to 50 million dollars. Of course, this was due to the location of 5th street, but Manhattan is still known for 'inch of land is an inch of gold', and so the villas on 57th street would still go for several million dollars.

When the villa's security guard saw Li Yang, he immediately walked towards him. He appeared respectful as he said, "Sir, are you Mister Mu Yi from China?"

Li Yang nodded his head, and Mu Yi was the name he decided to use in America. This was the name he told Xue, and that was why Li Yang decided on it. However, it could also possibly be because of Li Yang's

longing for Xue within his heart.

"Ah, Mister Mu Yi, please follow me. Mister Jack has been expecting Mister Mu Yi for quite a while already!" When the security guard heard this, he immediately became even more respectful.

Li Yang nodded his head, and secretly said inwardly, "It seems like the Hong Mercenaries name is more impressive than I thought!"...

"Ah, esteemed Mister Mu Yi. I, old Jack, am extremely honored to have the privilege of being your future manager!" An amiable and chubby old man narrowed his eyes and bowed to Li Yang as he spoke.

Li Yang slightly nodded his head and said, "You already know the purpose for my visit. I don't like to dilly dally, so the things that needs to be done after this, you should just say it!"

When old Jack heard this, he immediately laughed and said, "Esteemed Mister Mu Yi, please follow me to see my boxers. In the future, you will become one of them!" Li Yang nodded, and immediately followed old Jack into the villa's immense training facility. According to the design of the villa, this large training facility should normally be a garden, however, old Jack transformed it into a large, sealed training facility.

Currently, there were six large individuals madly training within this room.

A large Caucasian male single-handedly gripped an enormous barbell while training his arm strength, and from the remaining five individuals,

four of them were furiously kicking a sandbag. Li Yang could tell with a glance that that was a special sandbag, and normal sandbags would easily break under the pressure of their kicks. The last one was surprisingly an asian person, and Li Yang even determined that it was a chinese man after he felt the opposing party's aura. That large Chinese man continuously did frog jumps, and he carried weights all over his body.

"Mister Mu Yi, these represent my wealth. Those four are high level boxers, and the other two are both top-notch boxers. That frog jumping child, right, him. Look at the form of that frog jump! His similarly came from china, and is one of the ten super boxers!" Old Jack explained this to Li Yang with pride.

Li Yang faintly laughed, and he casually walked over to one of the sandbags.

Hu!

Li Yang's right leg turned into an afterimage, and struck horizontally against the sandbag. The powerful force from his leg was so powerful it created a terrifying sound, and that whistling sound made all of the surrounding boxers who were training pause for a moment before looking at Li Yang in astonishment.

Hong!

It was like a tire exploding in the middle of summer, and that special sandbag was unexpectedly blown apart by a single kick. The grains of sand within the sandbag slowly trickled out, and it was as if was an

hourglass. Slowly trickling out...

"Old Jack, what level of expert do you say I am then?" Li Yang looked at the dumbstruck old Jack, and asked while smiling.

Book 2 Chapter 1 Pt. 2 – Underground Boxing Arena

"Oh, Mu Yi, Mu Yi dear, you are simply giving me too many nice surprises. Heavens, top-notch expert, at least a top-notch expert! The ancient eastern part of China is indeed rather miraculous. You are just as outstanding as Tian Gang!" The pleasantly surprised Old Jack was extremely happy, and he turned around to face his trusted lieutenant. "Tian Gang, come and have a chat with your colleague here. Oh Tian Gang, my dear child, don't be too harsh on yourself. Relax, learn to enjoy!"

The Underground Boxing Arena was divided into the low division, mid division, high division, and top division! The athletes who participate in these events were correspondingly referred to as a low division boxer, mid division boxer, high division boxer, and top division boxer.

Different events would have different participation fees. The participation fee for a low division fight is several hundred dollars, a mid division fight several thousand dollars, a high division fight tens of thousands of dollars, and a top division fight would be several hundred thousand dollars.

There are several dozen fighters in the top division, and among them,

the ten most powerful boxers were known as the ten supreme boxers. The participation fee for them surpassed a million dollars; it was a price that was frightening to the extreme. Although a top division expert could make over ten million dollars, the amount of experts that survived for more than three years in history totaled to only two.

The surviving fighters from the training camps would enter their corresponding divisions. The high division boxers all had physical bodies with over 500 crystals of energy. Typically, the ones that were able to use the A1 gene medicine were all capable of entering the high division.

Mid division fighters were produced by training camps that lagged a bit behind. These training camps lacked the money to purchase the gene medicine, and so they could only enter their fighters into the mid division. As for the low division, that was for those who were bankrupt and without status, and were made up of rogues and ruffians who participated to make a living.

This Tian Gang who originated from China was indeed one of the ten supreme boxers. He was one of the top ten among almost 100 top division fighters, and his participation fee surpassed millions of dollars. His status was high, and he was far above Old Jack's other fighters.

Currently, Tian Gang was frog jumping like before, and it seemed as if he didn't notice Li Yang's previous kick at all. That large white man who was previously lifting the barbell stopped, and he was currently engrossed with Li Yang. The other four boxers looked at Li Yang in reverence, and only they knew exactly what kicking down that sandbag represented.

Although not every top division boxer could kick down this type of

sandbag, those that could were definitely top division boxers! The sandbags that top division boxers used were better than the high division sandbags that they used, as the materials were more expensive.

"Tian Gang, why aren't you greeting Mu Yi?" Old Jack seemed to be a bit angry.

Tian Gang continued to frog jump like before, and his moving figure continued to move up and down. Only a voice sounded out from his mouth. "Strength is indeed important in the Underground Boxing Arena. However, technique is even more important, for example, the most important one-hit kill in the underground arena. So what if your strength is a bit more powerful? Moreover, top division experts die every month. What does being a top division expert even mean!" Hearing these words, the large white man's face revealed an angry expression. However shortly after, he remembered Tian Gang's strength, and instead decided not to say anything.

After saying those words, Tian Gang closed his mouth and did not say anything further. He continued to frog jump like before...

Li Yang looked at the ruthless Tian Gang, and a smile appeared on the corners of his lips. "Interesting, ten supreme boxers?" Following that, Li Yang turned around and looked at Old Jack and said with a smile, "Old Jack, I know the Underground Boxing Arena's rules. There is a test for the physical body energy, squats, bench press, as well as leg speed in order to judge one's strength. Only after these tests would one be able to enter a certain division of competition. In that case, let's start now!"

Old Jack was shocked. "Right here?"

Li Yang looked at the frog jumping Tian Gang, and immediately told Old Jack, "Yes, right here!"

Immediately, the other five boxers all stopped. They all prepared to see just how formidable Li Yang was. Even Tian Gang lifted his head and glanced over at Li Yang before standing up shortly after. He walked to the side of the training room, and picked up a bottle of water before sitting down. His gaze was casted towards Li Yang.

It was obvious that he was also curious about Li Yang's true strength.

"Oh, Old Jack, there's no need to test my energy. I don't want others to know my true strength, so testing a bit of squats and bench press should be enough!" spoke Li Yang indifferently. His current Breath Restraint technique was still at the beginning stage, so although he grasped the ability to hide his internal energy, he was still unable to hide his physical body's energy. If he revealed his ten thousand crystals of physical body energy through a test, then Old Jack would most likely die from a heart attack.

When Old Jack heard this, his brows immediately furrowed. However, after thinking about Li Yang's background, a smile once again blossomed on his face. "Esteemed Mu Yi, the purpose of the underground arena testing is just to place you into the correct division. The bench press and squatting tests should be enough!"

Li Yang enthusiastically nodded his head.

"Mu Yi, this is the apparatus for the squatting test. You just need to use

your shoulder to resist the force. I will gradually increase the weight. If you think you've reached your limit, you can give up!" Old Jack smiled and pointed at the squat test apparatus.

Li Yang could tell with a glance that this was created based on the lever principle.

"Start with 1000 kg!" Li Yang said in a tranquil tone. Since all top division boxers could squat with 1000 kg, Li Yang's request for 1000 kg did not come as a surprise to anyone.

Old Jack's face revealed a smile as he pushed the button, and following that, ten round buckets began to boil. Li Yang felt the force of the weight, however, this amount of force to Li Yang was the same as an ordinary person lifting up a piece of fruit.

"Add another 200 kg!" Li Yang still had his previous undisturbed expression.

However, the others were not undisturbed. The greater the weight, the harder it was, and during these examinations, they would all add in increments of 10 kg. In addition, 1200 kg was considered rather formidable even among top division boxers.

Li Yang casually resisted the 1200 kg of weight and did a squat. Following that, he smiled and said, "Add another 200 kg!"

At this moment, even Old Jack became stunned. What did squatting 1400 kg represent?

Among the top division boxers, the weakest squatted about 1000 kg, and the more powerful ones averaged around 1200. However, the larger the weight, the more excruciatingly difficult it became. The ten supreme boxers all squatted above 1300 kg, however, none of them surpassed 1500 kg. As for the most powerful underground boxing king — Demon King, his squatting reached a terrifying 1500 kg.

By requesting 1400 kg in such a short time, Li Yang was implying that at the very least, he was at the level of the ten supreme experts.

"Mu Yi, this... do you want to slow down by a bit? Let's first add 100 kg, then add 100 kg after?" advised Old Jack.

Li Yang lightly laughed, and shook his head. Old Jack helplessly added two more round buckets, and immediately, the weight was once again increased. Li Yang once again effortlessly did a squat before releasing it, shocking everyone. He walked to Old Jack and said, "Old Jack, I think that this squatting energy should already be enough to prove my strength right? I don't think there is a need for a bench press test."

Old Jack stared distractedly, and only after a while did he cry out in surprise, "Oh, lord, thank you for your kindness!" The amount of wealth a supreme expert could bring to an agent like him was something that Old Jack clearly understood. Moreover, from Li Yang's previous relaxed expression, he could tell that the limit to Li Yang's squat test was definitely not 1400 kg.

Tian Gang stood up and walked towards Li Yang. The other five boxers, including that large white man, stood on the side and did not move, as

they were all stunned.

Of course, it was not because Li Yang squatted 1400 kg that they were stunned, but rather because from start to finish, Li Yang's face didn't even turn red! What did this mean? This meant that Li Yang didn't use his real strength at all!

How great was his true strength?

The five boxers, including Tian Gang all didn't know. However, what they did know was that even when the Demon King squatted 1400 kg, it was impossible for his face to not redden. In addition, Li Yang's easygoing expression from start to finish deeply shook them.

God, is there going to be a new Demon King?

This was what shouted from within the hearts of these five boxers. Meanwhile, Tian Gang walked up in front of Li Yang, and his eyes looked straight at Li Yang. The previously cold and detached eyes were currently blazing red, and a powerful aura arose.

"I, Tian Gang, challenge you!" A resolute and decisive voice rang within the spacious training room.

Li Yang looked at the battle-ready Tian Gang, and a flash of splendor appeared in his eyes. He smiled and said, "Sure, come at me at any time!"

Book 2 Chapter 2 Pt. 1 – Martial Addict Tian Gang

When Old Jack saw this, he immediately said in panic, "Oh! Tian Gang, Mu Yi, my dear children, don't hurt each other because of this. Wait until the competition, you can then teach your opponents a lesson, wouldn't that be enough? You are both so strong, a single kick will determine who lives and who dies. No matter which of you end up injured, I would be broken hearted!" Old Jack was quite familiar with the Underground Boxing Arena fights. With a single kick, if one wasn't careful enough, then even if they didn't die, they would still suffer a fatal injury. He wasn't willing to allow his two 'money trees' to die from internecine strife.

Li Yang gently laughed, and didn't say anything. If their strengths were close when they battled each other, then mistaken slaughter might occur. However, the current Li Yang's strength far surpassed this Tian Gang, and so it was impossible for manslaughter to occur.

Tian Gang coldly glared at Old Jack, and resolutely replied, "Old man, I am not a boxer from a training camp who lacks freedom! The reason for my entrance into the Underground Boxing Arena is precisely to fight with experts. If you continue to obstruct me, my agent tomorrow will be Miss Mary. Miss Mary has taken care of me many times already, heng heng!"

Old Jack immediately no long dared to speak. None of those training camp boxers had their freedom, and upon joining those training camps, they had to sign a contract with those training camps. Only upon earning three million dollars would they then be able to regain their freedom. As for those other five boxers under Old Jack, it was impossible for them to leave.

However, Tian Gang was different. Tian Gang originated from China, and he was determined to challenge himself within the Underground Boxing Arena. Because Old Jack was rather well known, he became his agent. However, when signing the contract, there was a line that stated that Tian Gang could leave Old Jack at any time, and Li Yang, whose goal was to earn money was planning to undergo a similar contract.

Rumor has it that Tian Gang originated from an ancient clan within China, and the gene medicine he used was also the A2 gene medicine. No one knew exactly how much money he had, however the others all knew that this Tian Gang was not a big spender. After becoming one of the ten supreme boxers, his participation fee surpassed a million dollars, and one could well imagine how much he made. However, he was rather harsh on himself, and no one ever saw him spend his money.

"If you want to compete, then just compete. Be careful my dear children!" Old Jack had a concerned appearance, and perhaps what he was truly concerned over was his money.

Tian Gang's gaze was once again cast on Li Yang, and that fiery gaze was full of fighting intent.

"Mu Yi, we'll fight right here!" Tian Gang's muscles were boiling, and he had an impatient urge. Powerful experts, only by fighting against powerful experts could one get stronger! It was also precisely this impatient urge that severed his connection with his clan after a conflict one day, resulting in him leaving his country.

"Li Yang slightly laughed and replied, "Sure, this area is pretty big!"

Tian Gang and Li Yang both stood firm as they observed each other.

Peng! Tian Gang removed a large block of lead weight from his legs.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Tian Gang removed his vest, and he was actually wearing a lead vest. That vest was at least ten centimeters thick!

What made everyone dumbstruck was that Tian Gang unexpectedly removed so many heavy lead weights from his body. All of these lead weights must have added up to several hundred jin. The other five could not understand no matter how they thought about it. Tian Gang's body was only so large, so how was he able to carry so many weights on him? However, they were also stunned due to one other matter. This was because they never saw Tian Gang take off these lead weights, meaning that Tian Gang carried out his daily activities while bearing these lead blocks weighing several hundred jin. It was normal for boxers to carry weights on them while training, however, to carry this much weight while going through daily life was simply too difficult to imagine. After all, for muscles to bear this much weight, it was possible for the muscles to sustain injuries.

"I respect you, so that's why I decided to use all of my strength to fight you!" Tian Gang looked at Li Yang, his eyes full of arrogance. The reason why he was able to constantly bear the weights without the need to worry about straining his muscles was due to his clan in east China's special inner family internal qi. The inner family internal qi was constantly moistening his muscles, allowing his muscles to be filled with vitality. However when facing the enemy, his barely a hundred crystals of internal qi couldn't compare to his 1000 crystals of physical body strength.

"You can attack first!" Li Yang did not want to say too much. Even if he

told the others that he allowed Overlord Xiang Yu to constantly apply gravity to his body and that he was constantly bearing 5000 jin, others would most likely not believe him.

Gravity restriction was a type of restriction most common within the Devil Realm. Because the Devil Realm focuses on cultivating the physical body, applying the gravity restriction while cultivating the body in various ways was rather normal.

However, even if he was bearing 5000 jin, with Li Yang's strength that was over 10,000 crystals, defeating Tian Gang was still an easy task.

"Then be careful!" Tian Gang shouted coldly. His body moved, and charged in front of Li Yang like a phantom. His two legs were like pincers, and twisted horizontally towards Li Yang's body. Li Yang's face was undisturbed, and with an effortless shift of his legs, he easily dodged Tian Gang's attack.

Tian Gang immediately lifted his body and stood up while looking at Li Yang. In Chinese, he said, "You also know the inner family internal qi?" Just now, Tian Gang's speed was created from the fusion of his physical body and a movement technique. Li Yang waited until the last moment before moving, and he also separated himself from the attack instantly. It was obvious that Li Yang's speed far surpassed his, and that was the reason why he made such a decision.

When Li Yang heard this, he began to laugh. "You are correct, I have inner family internal qi. In addition, I have already reached the Xiantian realm!"

Tian Gang immediately became stunned. The formidability of Xiantian qi was something that he clearly understood. That was a thousand crystals of internal energy, and if Li Yang really did reach the Xiantain realm, then with the combination of Li Yang's internal energy and his body's muscles, it was impossible for Tian Gang to fight back..

"Don't worry, I will only use my physical body's energy in our exchange. However, for movement, I can't just stand there and allow you to hit me right? That's why using Xiantian qi is still unavoidable." Li Yang appeared rather innocent, and on Tian Gang's usual expressionless face appeared a rare emotion. Perhaps it could be called a 'smile'.

"Good, I will allow you to see the Underground Boxing Arena's most powerful Chain Sweeping leg!" The cold and detached expression was once restored to Tian Gang's face. His legs were like large beheading blades, and frantically chained into a disk as it headed towards Li Yang. With the Chain Sweeping Leg released, Li Yang did not have the space to attack at all.

"You are strong, but I'm stronger!"

With a lash of his leg, Li Yang's powerful physical body energy exploded forth, and a fierce whistling sound arose and fluctuated within the air!

Pa!

Li Yang's right leg was like a powerful whip as it horizontally smashed into Tian Gang's right leg, and Tian Gang immediately felt a wave of severe pain on that leg. It became numb, and he found that he could no longer stand up.

One hit knockdown!

Tian Gang helplessly sat on the floor, and his right leg could not move at all. Luckily, what Li Yang used was the whip leg, and although it was flexible and strong, it wouldn't break his leg. Tian Gang used his internal qi to ease the pain, and he believed that it would recover in a few days. Right now, however, he couldn't move his right leg at all.

"I lose!" Tian Gang looked at Li Yang, and his eyes began to burn with an even brighter fighting aura. "However, I won't give up. There will be a day when I can prevail over you!"

Li Yang at this time lightly laughed. "I welcome your challenge at any time!" Following that, Li Yang walked over at Old Jack who was scared silly, and he didn't know if Old Jack was shocked stupid because of his money tree Tian Gang getting injured or because Li Yang knocked Tian Gang down with a single kick.

Book 2 Chapter 2 Pt. 2 – Martial Addict Tian Gang

"Old Jack, make arrangements for my entrance into the Underground Boxing Arena as soon as possible. Right, I don't like things to be too noisy or lively, so help me find a villa here," said Li Yang with a smiling expression. His words made it sound as if he wanted Old Jack to put up the money, and of course, this was done deliberately.

When Old Jack heard this, he immediately suppressed his inner

conflicts. His eyes continuously flickered, and it was obvious that he was struggling internally. Just now, Li Yang knocked down Tian Gang with a single kick, and Li Yang's reputation instantly rose to a similar status as the Demon King's within his heart.

If he really was the agent of Demon King, then he would definitely be able to make at least 10 million. However, an ordinary villa within Manhattan would still cost several million dollars. With this, didn't it mean that he would have to spend quite a bit of money? However, when Old Jack recalled that he hadn't signed the contract with Li Yang yet, he immediately became anxious. "Ah, this Mu Yi won't sign with anyone else right? Ah, if that happens, then I won't even be able to make a single dollar!" When he thought up to this point, he suppressed the pain in his heart. "My dear Mu Yi, you need a villa. As your agent, of course I'll satisfy your request."

Although Old Jack was trying really hard to maintain a smile, his stiff expression and two shuddering hands illustrated that Old Jack was currently suffering on the inside. Several million! This amount of money even to him, an Underground Boxing Arena agent, was still a large number.

"Haha... Old Jack, you are simply too kind. I wasn't asking you to buy it for me, the money will still be put up by me. Why are you so enthusiastic? Of course, if you really want to help me pay for it, I wouldn't stop you!" Li Yang appeared to be extremely astonished.

Old Jack became momentarily stunned, but of course, money was more important than face, so Old Jack immediately said, "Oh, Mu Yi, dear Mu Yi, you really are generous. Just now? Just now I made an error, and I'm growing in years. This brain is also starting to fail, hehe..." Old Jack laughed as he spoke, and was not embarrassed at all.

Li Yang didn't like to accept favors, and he definitely would not allow others to buy him a villa. Just now, he was simply teasing Old Jack, however, this proved that at the very least, Li Yang was worth at least a few million in Old Jack's heart...

Three days later, on Old Jack's balcony.

Li Yang was currently sitting on a couch, and he looked rather comfortable. Next to the couch was a small circular desk, and on the circular desk was a bottle of vodka.

"Heng heng, although this Absolut Vodka has quite a high alcoholic content and can be considered a strong drink, it still doesn't taste as good as Erguotou!" Li Yang was currently holding a wine cup while admiring the residential area's beauty. He was muttering, and it was obvious that he was rather unsatisfied.

If Old Jack heard his say these words, he would definitely die from internal suffering. This Absolut Vodka was specially ordered from Sweden, and normally even if you had money, you wouldn't be able to buy it. He used his own earnings from dozens of years of work as an underground boxing agent to order it.

Erguotou, that was simply something that old men drank in Beijing. It was cheap beyond belief, and a bottle was simply a few Renminbi (RMB). As for New York, Erguotou in New York was still relatively expensive, and costed a bit more than 10 dollars to buy. However, compared to the hundred thousand dollar Absolut Vodka, the disparity was not just a little bit.

"Hi, Mu Yi!" A cry rang out, and Li Yang did not need to turn his head to know that Old Jack was coming.

Old Jack walked up to the balcony, and looked at that bottle of vodka. He couldn't help but feel his heart getting torn apart. However, he still consoled himself. "Isn't it just a few hundred thousand dollars? A villa costs a few million!" It was quite obvious that he remembered the events three days ago. If at that time, Li Yang didn't add that sentence, he really would have had to spend a few million.

"Old Jack, didn't I tell you not to disturb me for no reason?" Li Yang slightly furrowed his brows.

"Ha, Mu Yi, it's an important matter. I found the villa you wanted, haha, I really am too fortunate this time. A Californian Asian business owner went bankrupt, and he's currently struggling to sell his villa. However, where would he find a buying price with such little time? When he heard that I was buying, he immediately sent someone to look for me. I simply used a bit of my agent methods, and the villa valued at 6 million dollars was offered to me at 4 million. The contract will be signed tomorrow morning." Old Jack was extremely excited as he spoke to Li Yang.

Li Yang's eyes faintly lit up, and he stood up shortly after. He turned around to greet Old Jack and said, "Old Jack, this really is good news. Come, let us toast for his sake!"

When Old Jack heard this, a smile immediately bloomed on his face. "Oh, Mu Yi, then you have to drink with me on this!" While speaking, Old Jack took out an especially large wine cup, and the remaining half of the

strong liquor was completely poured out.

"Come, come, come, let's toast, cheers for the new villa!" Old Jack held that king sized wine cup and touched Li Yang's ordinary wine cup with it. Without caring about the difference in cup sizes, he raised his head and drank.

Gu gu...

Li Yang's eyes widened as he saw Old Jack drink it all in one go; he became stupefied! This was genuine Absolut Vodka, a truly alcoholic drink!

"Haha, with this, I drank fifty thousand dollars. Worth, worth!" Old Jack felt proud of himself. Giving Li Yang that bottle of first-rate vodka had made his heart suffer bitterly, and now that he drank half of it in one go, he immediately felt much more comfortable.

"Old Jack, are you okay?" Li Yang spoke with concern towards the completely red-faced Old Jack, as drinking that much strong alcohol at once was rather frightening. Fortunately, this Old Jack had already been drinking strong liquor for the past ten years. His life wasn't in danger, however drinking all that at once, once that powerful alcohol took effect, then...

Peng! Right when Old Jack was about to say that nothing was wrong, he began to feel dizzy. Heaven and earth swayed, and he immediately collapsed. Soon after, snoring could be heard.

Li Yang felt a bit distressed. "This... don't tell me that I have to carry him down?" Seeing Old Jack lying on the floor, it seemed as though even if the world was about to end, he would still have no reaction. Li Yang sighed and grabbed Old Jack by his suit, and Old Jack was carried just like this with one hand downstairs. Fortunately, Old Jack's suit was brand name, and it didn't tear along the way.

The next day.

"Mu Yi, that villa will soon be yours, what do you think? Not bad right? In addition, it's only roughly 100 meters away." Old Jack pointed at a luxurious villa not too far away, and the current Old Jack was rather energetic. It was as if yesterday's events never happened.

However after saying so much, Li Yang seemed to not show the slightest reaction. Old Jack felt that it was rather strange and turned around towards Li Yang.

At this moment, Li Yang's gaze was resting past the villa towards a restaurant — Taibai Restaurant. A smiling expression was on his face, and at the same time, an individual walked inside. That person was Tian Gang.

Book 2 Chapter 3 Pt. 1 – Realm of Murderers

Li Yang walked towards Taibai Restaurant. Of course, he wasn't going because he saw Tian Gang, but rather because he caught a whiff of a familiar alcohol scent — Erguotou's scent.

"It's been such a long time since I drank Erguotou. I never would have thought that there would be a restaurant right across from my new villa that carries Erguotuo. In the future, my days will be much more comfortable, and no longer will I have to drink those foreign vodkas." The smile on Li Yang's face widened.

"Old Jack, let that unfortunate Californian banker wait an hour, if he cannot wait then just let him leave!" Between the villa and Erguotou, Li Yang chose Erguotou.

Old Jack immediately revealed a strange expression, and he was confused and in disbelief. No matter how much the money-worshiping Old Jack thought about it, he could not understand why Li Yang would care so little about such a cheap villa...

Taibai Restaurant on Manhattan's 57th street could not be considered eye-catching. Compared to other similar restaurants, Taibai Restaurant's size was only roughly a third of those more luxurious restaurants. Taibai restaurant was only two stories tall, and the interior decorations appeared to be exceedingly close to those in ancient eastern China. It seemed as if it was a restaurant from ancient China, and although the restaurant wasn't that large, there were still quite a few customers. There were many Chinese people here, of course, but the majority were foreigners who enjoyed Chinese culture. The atmosphere here was

auspicious and peaceful, and the walls were filled with an ancient ink fragrance. Upon walking in, Li Yang immediately took a liking to this restaurant.

A mellow flute melody played within the restaurant, and an elderly Chinese man was playing it. In front of the elder was a bottle of wine, and he leisurely played the instrument...

Li Yang directly walked up to the second floor and walked into a private room. A waiter on the second floor walked over, and upon seeing Li Yang, the waiter spoke in Mandarin. "Sir, are you Chinese?"

"Yes, that's right. I smelled the fragrance of Erguotou from far away. Today, I still have matters to attend to, so give me three bottles first!" Li Yang smiled as he spoke, and upon seeing another Chinese individual outside of China, he still felt rather amiable, especially within this old-fashioned restaurant.

Upon hearing Li Yang speak in fluent Mandarin, the waiter's smile immediately brightened and said, "Sir, please wait for a moment, the Erguotou will be delivered at once. I have one more question, did sir arrive from China?"

Li Yang's mood today was rather excellent, and lightly nodded his head.

The waiter's was smiling from ear to ear as he quickly exited the private room. After a short while, a middle aged man wearing a traditional Chinese jacket walked over with three bottles of Erguotou in his hands.

"Haha, young brother came from China, it really makes me extremely happy. It has already been a long time since I met another Chinese person that came from China. This is quite embarrassing, I was too excited and forgot my manners. Let me introduce myself first, I am this restaurant's owner Ge Pu!" While speaking, the middle aged man placed the three bottles of Erguotou on top of the table.

Li Yang grabbed a bottle of Erguotou and said, "This is Manhattan's 57th street, and typically, tour guides would advise tourists to steer clear from this area. In addition, most of the Chinese people would be in Chinatown, so it's normal for this area to lack Chinese people, moreover Chinese people that came from China. Boss Ge, you are really quite courageous to establish a restaurant on 57th street, it really is something worth admiring."

Ge Pu shook his head and laughed. "I also understand that this area is a bit dangerous, however, as long as we are careful, there still wouldn't be many problems."

Li Yang took a whiff of the Erguotou's alcoholic scent, and suddenly gulped down half of the bottle. A fierce wave of scorching heat rushed through his mind, and Li Yang once again thought back to his days training in the research institute...

During that period of roughly a year, Li Yang trained like crazy. He used training to numb himself, and sweat dripped down from him like rain. However, the moment he stopped training, he would not be able to stop himself from thinking about Xue, so he used strong alcohol to befuddle himself. However, using the alcohol to make himself stop worrying only made the worrying worse. Was this is the so-called when the heart aches, one is not drunk, but when the heart does not ache, one is drunk?

Li Yang hasn't been drunk since, and each time a wave of this strong liquor went down his chest, the more the alcohol would burn within his chest and spark the longing within his heart.

Li Yang stood up in frustration, and turned his body around before standing by the private room's window. While looking at the people entering and leaving, Li Yang suddenly chanted softly,

"Long I stand on a high-rise in the gentle breeze, saddened is spring everywhere I see, the sky is vast yet overcast, all round is bleak. In the remains of the day, in the hazy light the green of grass dims, against a rail I lean, yet who can through my quiescence my melancholy read. I'd rather pretend to be a giddy eccentric looking to get tipsy, when there is wine, singing follows, yet bland would be such imposed recreation. Becoming loose are my clothes yet I regret not, for I languish and suffer for her willingly"

[TL: Whoever translated this here is a lifesaver. I could not understand the poem at all :(

<https://28utscprojects.wordpress.com/2011/11/10/s039/>]

The lyrics to the Melody of Butterflies Chasing Flowers made the longing within Li Yang's heart even stronger.

"Becoming loose are my clothes yet I regret not, for I languish and suffer for her willingly," muttered Li Yang. Following that, he laughed three times, and dumped the remaining half bottle of alcohol into his mouth. The laugh just now might have just been Li Yang choking or painful coughing. He began to loudly cough, coughs that caused pain

within the lungs...

"Haha..." When Li Yang stopped coughing, he once again began to laugh loudly. He picked up the other two bottles of Erguotou, and casually asked Ge Pu, "How much are these?"

Ge Pu looked at Li Yang with a complicated expression and said, "Thirty dollars, however today is the first time I'm meeting little brother, so just consider it my gift. Little brother, don't blame this old brother for saying this, but this old brother is already forty something and also originated from China. To live a good life, you have to put your past behind you. Otherwise, to live an entire life of pain is simply not worth it."

Li Yang took out a hundred dollar bill and place it on the table. He glanced over at Ge Pu before shaking his head and leaving the restaurant. While leaving, Li Yang had a strange smile on his face, a smile that seemed to reveal bitterness and frustration...

After signing the contract, Li Yang immediately began to live within his new villa.

"My dear Mu Yi, is this Erguotou really that great? Why didn't you even look at the contract when you were signing it, and instead drank the entire time while speaking chinese?" Old Jack seemed to be extremely suspicious as he looked at Li Yang.

Li Yang merely laughed, and made Old Jack feel that understanding him might be more difficult than for Li Yang to obtain a Golden Dan.

"Old Jack, I've already signed the contract with you a couple days ago. You are already my agent, so have you taken care of the matters regarding my identity in the Underground Boxing Arena yet? I want to take a look at the underground world's headquarters and see what it's like!" Li Yang finally spoke out his true objective.

Why did Li Yang go to New York? Why didn't he go directly to England?

Holy Forest Group's wealth was indeed great, and if Li Yang directly went to the headquarters of the Holy Forest Group, he most likely wouldn't be able to accomplish anything. Although his brother Li Shuo offered to use the influence of the Hong Mercenaries, Li Shuo was merely a district supervisor, and haven't truly reached the higher levels of the Hong Mercenaries. To truly use the Hong Mercenaries' strength to deal with this matters, this was impossible at least for now.

Only by entering the underground world and by becoming a member of this underground world could he use the strength of the underground world to defeat Holy Forest Group. Even if he couldn't make Holy Forest Group fall apart, he could at the very least make the Lin family live in constant panic. Moreover, to destroy the Lin family while it was under panic, only that would truly vent out Li Yang's anger. However, entering the underground world wasn't that easy, and become a boxer within the underground world was the easiest way.

Li Yang currently had two matters to take care of. First was to exterminate the Holy Forest Group, and to exterminate the Lin family. The second was to cultivate and reach the Tribulation stage as soon as possible so that he could find Jiang Xue.

To exterminate the Lin family, he had to at the very least have powerful

strength. The heart of the underground world in New York was a great place, and here, he could become friends with many influential parties as well as obtain the most up to date intelligence. In addition, only in this place would Li Yang's strength be like 'a fish back in water'.

As for cultivation, only by fighting powerful experts could he improve faster. Looking for powerful experts? The underground headquarters obviously had the most experts!

Currently, what Li Yang had to do was to make the Lin family live in dread. At the same time, Li Yang had to improve his own strength as quickly as possible! Holy Forest Group was light, and Li Yang was darkness; Li Yang had a plan for everything, and right now, the first step of his plan began...

Book 2 Chapter 3 Pt. 2 – Assassin Organization

"Mu Yi, of course I took care of your underground identity. I, Old Jack, still have some status within the Underground Boxing Arena!" While speaking, Old Jack's hands revealed a card around the size of a credit card.

"This is your ID within the underground world, as well as your VIP membership card to Grand Kaili Restaurant. With this card, you are now an official member of the underground world. Your information is recorded in there, and currently, you are a high division boxer. Oh! My dear Mu Yi, don't worry, your strength is something I understand fully and you are definitely a top division boxer. However, there are rules within the Underground Boxing Arena, and high division is the highest

you can be upon entering. No matter how powerful you are, only after experiencing thirty fights could you become a top division boxer." Old Jack was scared that Li Yang would get angry and quickly added.

Surprisingly, Li Yang merely smiled as he took the seemingly ordinary card. Li Yang definitely knew how important this card was, and without this card, it was impossible to carry out his plan.

"Old Jack, the Underground Boxing Arena's rules and regulations are something that I clearly understand. Each individual can enter into either the low, middle, or high division, however one cannot immediately enter the top division. Only after fulfilling thirty rounds could they ascend to a higher division, and of course, this is all on the premise that the fighter is still alive," said Li Yang to Old Jack.

When Old Jack heard this, he immediately smiled. He feared that since Li Yang was new, he wouldn't know the rules and regulations of the Underground Boxing Arena. Since Li Yang already knew, there was no longer any need for him to be worried.

It was only natural for Li Yang to thoroughly research the underground world. Moreover, in the past when he was still a member of the Security Bureau 9th Division, it was his job to take care of those ordinary experts. Since some of those experts were members of the underground world, how could Li Yang not know?

...

There was a luxurious restaurant between 57th and 58th street — Grand Kaili Restaurant!

Grand Kaili Restaurants could be found throughout the entire world, however there was something quite strange about them. Grand Kaili Restaurant only admitted VIP members, yet becoming a VIP member of this Grand Kaili Restaurant was excruciatingly difficult. Many upstarts who believed they had some money wanted to become a member, however, they were all refused.

In other words, a membership card for the Grand Kaili Restaurant was not something that could be obtained simply by having money, and those who were able to get in were definitely mysterious.

The VIP card to the Grand Kaili Restaurant was precisely the identification card of the underground world, moreover, the Grand Kaili Restaurants were the various regional entrances into the underground world. Back then, the Green Mercenaries and the American Mafia constructed the Grand Kaili Restaurants merely to secure up the underground world's entrances and did not think much about making money. However, all the members who entered the Grand Kaili Restaurant were rich and powerful, so the Grand Kaili Restaurant actually makes quite a bit.

All of these rich and powerful figures within the underground world had wealth surpassing that of Forbes' number one ranking. Forbes only mentioned public individuals; how could it list the world's true number 1?

To not even speak of others, even a king from the Middle East had wealth and riches far surpassing that of Forbes' number one, Mister Gates. There were still many others, for example the Italian Mafia's faction leader and the Italian Mafia's five great families' lords. Within the last century, the Italian Mafia's five great families were the ones who wielded

the most power within Europe, and currently, the five families' wealth was simply inconceivable.

Was it possible that the Italian Mafia's assets totaled to over a trillion dollars?

No one knows, because they are simply deep and incomprehensible. They are giants within the underground world, and who could truly claim to know everything about them?

In short, these giant powers within the underground world far surpassed those firms who had only been in development for a couple dozen years, and they were at a level in which others could only dream of reaching! Gates? You tell me, can someone who has only made a few dozen years worth of money compare to a family who has rampaged over Europe for over a century? Moreover, behind their backs were the powerful Italian Mafia.

...

At eight in the evening, the Manhattan lights shone brightly and with extraordinary splendor. Brilliant colors filled the streets, and countless tourists were strolling through them. New York at night time was quite fascinating, however, Li Yang who was dressed completely in black was actually the one who drew quite a bit of attention. This was due to the fact that within one meter around him, no one drew near. Li Yang casually walked down Manhattan's 57th street, and the ice cold aura slowly wrapped itself around him. When the countless number of tourists walked near Li Yang, they could not help but stand to the side.

This created an extremely unique scene, and although 57th street was quite noisy and full of people, there was unexpectedly not a single person a meter around Li Yang.

Li Yang took out a small bottle of Erguotou from within his bosom and gently drank a gulp. He felt the scorching heat within his chest, and shortly after, he raised his head to face north. What appeared before his eyes was indeed the luxurious restaurant — Grand Kaili Restaurant. Li Yang placed the small bottle back into a pocket within his bosom and walked towards Grand Kaili Restaurant.

“Sir, please show your VIP card!” A good-looking blonde woman bowed while speaking, and from her insight, she could tell that Li Yang was not an ordinary person.

Li Yang glanced over the alluring entrance and took out his VIP card, which doubled as his ID card within the underground world.

The young blonde woman extended the device in her hands, and when Li Yang’s VIP card touched the monitor on the device, a small green light lit up. The young blonde woman immediately said in a sweet voice, “Welcome honorable mister!” The young blonde woman knew that those who entered Grand Kaili Restaurant were not ordinary people, and she would obviously try her best not to offend them.

Li Yang took back his VIP card and entered the lobby of the restaurant.

Within the lobby of Grand Kaili Restaurant, there were some newly developed IBMT99 computers that had not yet appeared on the open market. When Li Yang saw these computers, a smile appeared on his face.

He immediately walked towards a computer and touched the screen. Immediately, a map of the underground world appeared.

New York's underground base was precisely located under Central Park, and a single floor covered roughly thirty hectares. The New York underground base had a total of two floors. The higher floor was the headquarters for the Underground Boxing Arena and had roughly a dozen boxing stages. The floor below it was divided into two parts; one part was reserved for the Assassin Organization's general headquarters, and the other half made up the world's biggest black market auction.

"It should be through this hallway." Li Yang still remembered the map he pulled up on the computer earlier.

Li Yang walked through the hallway, and ten different elevators appeared in front of him. Li Yang took one down to the second floor. The underground world's second layer was extremely spacious, and this applied even more so to the Assassin Organization's portion. There were very few people here, and only a few service personnel walked about.

"Welcome to the general headquarters of the Assassin Organization. I'm not sure whether sir wants to issue a mission or to receive one?" An ethnically mixed beauty spoke to Li Yang.

A fierce expression hung on Li Yang's face. "Obviously to issue a mission!" The mixed beauty immediately replied, "Sir, come with me!" Shortly after, Li Yang followed the beauty into a room with a screen hanging on the wall.

"Sir, please insert your VIP card into the slot! The computer will tell you

what to do after that," narrated the mixed beauty. Li Yang immediately inserted his VIP card, and inputted his request into the displayed page.

Clacking noises sounded from the keyboard, and Li Yang's mission was sent out.

"Within the Holy Forest Group, kill any directly related clan members. Each death will be rewarded with a million dollars! Mission duration time, indefinite!"

Book 2 Chapter 4 Pt. 1 – Assassin: Bullet

"Holy Forest group's founder Lin Aotian has a wife and a son. The wife is the lord of familial possessions, and major matters are usually handled by the Lin Family elders. The five great elders are all important individuals who established the Holy Forest Group together with Lin Aotian. Lin Aotian's son's family has a son, a daughter, and an adopted child. The son's name is Lin Tianyu, the daughter's name Lin Tianjiao, and the adopted child's original name was Pan Yu, but it was changed to Lin Yu! Directly related members total to 6 people, so sir must pay six million dollars!" The mixed beauty tapped a few times on the screen and easily obtained the Holy Forest Group's information.

The corners of Li Yang's mouth curved into a smiling expression, and he coldly snorted inwardly. "Only six million dollars, heng heng, Lin Tianyu, I want your entire family to live in fear and panic. When your people go on vacation, I wonder if there will be armor-penetrating bullets targeting you from time to time, and when you are eating, if there will be some type of ticking time-bomb!" When Li Yang thought about how Lin Tianyu would be disturbed by countless assassins each day, he felt delighted within his heart.

Li Yang thought about the the second reason why he came here — to become an assassin, a lone assassin!

"Young lady, I intend to become an assassin, and I am not quite sure where I would go to do this? Right, this is my bank card!" When Li Yang saw the eight million in his bank account drop down to two million, he did not feel the slightest bit of distress.

If one's strength was great, becoming an assassin was a great way to make a large amount of money. Of course, this was on the premise that your strength was sufficient and that you could complete the missions you accepted. For Li Yang to defeat the Lin family, money was indispensable. The Underground Boxing Arena and the Assassin Industry were both fast ways to become rich, yet at the same time, they were industries that held the most terrifying mortality rates.

The mixed beauty accepted the six million dollars, and her mood improved. After all, their job as an intermediary earned them a certain percentage. After hearing that Li Yang wanted to become an assassin, the mixed beauty immediately enthusiastically replied:

"Our Assassin Organization's most powerful group has three families. It is divided into the Japanese 'Dual Flowers', Russian 'Exterminators', and the legendary — Chinese 'Heaven's Ruin'! The 'Dual Flowers' is separated into the Chrysanthemum Group and the Sakura Group, and is also split into ninjas and warriors! The Russian 'Exterminators' are nearly all made up of Siberian Snow Wolfman, and the Snow Wolfman are comparable to the Dark Assembly Wolfman, however their numbers were far fewer. As for China's Assassin Group 'Heaven's Ruin', it is simply too mysterious. No targets of 'Heaven's Ruin' has ever lived, and 'Heaven's Ruin' is our Assassin Organization's legend."

When Li Yang heard this, he lifted his eyebrows. "Japanese Dual Flowers, Russian Exterminators, and China's Heaven's Ruin?"

The mixed young woman continued, "Our Assassin Organization obviously would not only have these three families, and there are many who decide to go solo. Sir, if you came to register alone, then you would be considered a lone assassin. Signing up is quite simple, and as long as you use your VIP card to sign up and then pay a fee of ten thousand

dollars, you can immediately become an assassin. In the future, you will be able to directly accept missions online!"

...

"Mister came to register just now and might not be extremely clear about the matters of the Assassin organization. I will just state a few reminders on the topic of weapons. Typically, solo assassins all use firearms, and only a few individually powerful assassins will use cold weaponry. I wanted to remind sir that enemies encountered during an assassination mission are not ordinary people, and that a normal bullet won't be enough. Typically, weaponry need to have the power of armor-penetrating bullets!" reminded the mixed woman with good intentions.

Li Yang paid no attention to these words. With the Flying Dagger, what kind of firearm did he need?

However soon after, Li Yang began to knit his brows. "If I used the Flying Dagger in the underground world and become infamous, won't there be people in this country who will doubt my identity? In addition, there is still that Lin Tianyu, would he doubt that I was Li Yang? The current Lin Tianyu reached the strength of a sixth rank expert at the very least. I am not yet his opponent, and if he were to find out my real identity before we actually meet, that would not be good news. For good or bad, I should take action only after my strength has surpassed his! En, I can't use the Flying Dagger!"

The name Xiao Li Flying Dagger was still a rather well-known name within the underground world. As soon as Li Yang used the Flying Dagger, it was likely that many people would question his identity.

However, if he didn't use his Flying Daggers, what would he use?

Firearms? In the past when he was a part of 'Dragon Fang' special forces, Li Yang was indeed quite proficient in the usage of firearms. However Li Yang understood that true top-notch assassins would not use firearms, as firearms created too much sound and would alert others too easily. In addition, against a real expert, firearms were inferior to cold weaponry.

Hearing the mixed young lady speak of armor penetrating bullets, Li Yang suddenly felt his heart move. "Armor penetrating bullets?" A thought suddenly bubbled forth within his mind, and immediately, Li Yang began to feel excited. He thought of what would become his assassin weapon.

"Miss, register me. As for the name, just write down 'Bullet'!" Li Yang laughed mysteriously.

The mixed lady was a bit puzzled, and she was muttering something, "Bullet? Bullet? You really want such a strange name?"

Five minutes later.

"This is Mister's account name and password. In the future, sir can directly accept missions online, and the reward from the missions would be directly added to mister's bank account." The mixed young lady gave Li Yang his registration materials.

"Assassin 'Bullet' — Rank C!"...

Within Li Yang's villa.

"Haha... good. My Flying Daggers can kill, and bullets fired from a gun can also kill. What if I used the bullets in a similar manner as guns?" Within the villa, Li Yang's mind was revolving. "No, why do I have to use bullets? Wouldn't steel marbles be enough? In addition, on the aspect of power, the power of steel marbles are greater!"

Back when Li Yang was a part of the Security Bureau 9th Division, his internal strength was barely at the first layer, yet the attack power of his Flying Daggers already surpassed bullets. Now that Li Yang's 'Demonic Yang Law' reached the fourth layer, moreover with his physical strength reaching the fifth rank level, who knows how many times more powerful it is now. Even if the current Li Yang used steel marbles, most likely the power would still far surpass his Flying Daggers in the past.

Li Yang's frightening wrist arm strength, with his unique Flying Dagger technique mixed in, moreover together with Li Yang's Xiantian internal qi, ha, that strength would definitely surpass that of an armor penetrating bullet. If an armor penetrating bullet had enough strength, then Li Yang definitely had enough qualifications to become a top-notch assassin.

Li Yang's excitement was reflected on his face. "Flying Dagger, ha, the Xiao Li Flying Dagger technique does not absolutely need to be used with Flying Daggers. As long as I improve and perfect it, it can similarly be used on steel marbles. In ancient Chinese history, there was even someone who could injure others with a flying flower. The reason for this was due to great strength, and even if the current me was back in the ancient eras, I would still be a Xiantian expert. In addition, physical body

energy is also more powerful than Xiantian qi by quite a bit. I don't need to use flower petals, I'll use steel marbles, so the power should be higher than a petal's right?!"

Li Yang's face immediately revealed even more excitement. "Right, I still have the Escape Technique, the Escape Technique from the Immortal Realm. An Escape Technique that is stronger than the Kunlun Paradise's Five Element supreme sacred text. With this Escape Technique, who can avoid assassination by me? Even if I am unable to dispose of my target, with the Escape Technique, who could harm me?"

"Hello, Old Jack? Help me buy some marbles, the more the better. Right, marbles, steel marbles!"

Li Yang hung up the phone, and the smile on his face became brighter. "In the past, I could at most carry roughly a dozen Flying Daggers, and anymore would hinder my movement, but steel marbles? Haha, most likely even keeping a hundred would be quite easy!"

"However from today forth, I need to take the 'Xiao Li Flying Dagger' technique and change it a bit, allow it to be suitable for steel marbles!" Li Yang said inwardly with resolution.

Book 2 Chapter 4 Pt. 2 – Assassin: Bullet

IET: The guns used by these assassins aren't normal guns, they are modified. These modified guns have quite a few that actually use steel marbles as bullets. Li Yang using these steel marbles really is quite

misleading, making others think that he is actually using a firearm. Use bullets? After all, when he used his arm strength, the shape allows the marble to more easily gain power, and the offensive power will also be greater.

One more point. The original book does indeed have the name Flying Dagger, and this is for sure. The current lead using marbles is still unavoidable, after all, Xiao Li Flying Dagger's exclusive nature is too obvious. Its unique identity can easily leak out the user's identity, how could he continue to cultivate with the Flying Dagger? Everyone will understand soon, I can only tell everyone, that the true Flying Dagger Dao does not absolutely need a Flying Dagger in one's hands. A true Flying Dagger expert even without a dagger in hand can easily end their opponent's life.

The days passed one by one, and Li Yang spent his days inside his villa training the marbles. He had the same willpower when he was training the Xiao Li Flying Dagger on training the marbles...

Li Yang's eyes did not even blink, and all of his attention was focused on the steel plate in front of him. Suddenly, his right hand moved, and the hand turned into an afterimage. Xiu! A muffled sound tore through the air, and following that, a peng sound rang out, and the marble completely sank into the steel plate.

"Li Yang you brat, this is another failure. It time, it penetrated more than ten centimeters." Overlord Xiang Yu took joy in Li Yang's misfortune, and once again announced Li Yang's failure.

When Li Yang heard Overlord Xiang Yu's words, not only did he furrow his eyebrows, he also said inwardly, "There is some problems with its strength. It actually penetrated through the steel plate ten centimeters?" Li Yang's goal was to make the steel marble penetrate the steel plate exactly 10 centimeters, not a single bit more and not a single bit less.

At the level where Li Yang is currently at, when shooting out the marble, the amount of strength used had to be at the perfect state. It could not be a bit more, and could not lack any either. Li Yang did not yet have success with the marbles, but when he shot out Flying Daggers, he could clearly feel the perfect feeling. In particular, it was a type of profound and intoxicating feeling, and when you felt that feeling, it meant that your Flying Dagger was perfect as well.

"I don't believe that I cannot reach the level I have with Flying Daggers using marbles!" Li Yang's air of arrogance rose, and he continuously trained. One marble after another shot into the steel plate, and Li Yang's left and also began to move. Marbles shot towards the steel plate like sharp arrows.

Suddenly, Li Yang's two hands were like a machine gun, and unceasingly shot out steel marbles. The speed was so fast that all that could be seen were two after images.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! ...

It was as if rocks were smashing into mud, and the marbles easily sank into that 20 centimeter steel plate. In addition, each and every marble sank roughly 10 centimeters. Suddenly, Li Yang's eyes suddenly lit

up, and his mind immediately entered the 'Joyous Spirit Boundary'. The two marbles shot out from his hands immediately changed its trajectory, and while completely under Li Yang's control, they shot towards the designated position.

Li Yang felt a bit pleased within his heart and said, "Not bad, the most important thing is that the three boundaries that can control the Flying Daggers didn't change, and can be directly applied to the marbles!"

...

Evening, within Li Yang's bedroom.

Li Yang was sitting cross-leggedly on his bed. No, if one observed carefully, one would find that there was a centimeter gap between his legs and the surface of the bed.

Threads of faint green streams of air continuously revolved within Li Yang's body, and his entire body was absorbing this green stream. If an internal cultivator saw this, then they would definitely be shocked. After all, this green colored stream was terrifyingly condensed, and the typical heaven and earth spiritual essence that cultivators absorbed were extremely thin, and would not develop a color.

Xiu!

As if a whale was swallowing water, heaven and earth spiritual essence quickly rushed into Li Yang's internal body, and was continuously absorbed by him. It was refined, and integrated into his dantian's

'nebula'. In the end, that worldly spiritual essence turned into threads of Xiantian qi, and allowed Li Yang's power to increase another level.

A night passed, and the first glimmer of light had already appeared in the sky. Li Yang got up and walked towards his balcony, and began to inhale the fresh early morning air.

"After experiencing this period of time, my 'Devil Yang Law' should have already completed its fourth layer right?" thought Li Yang within his heart. Previously at the research institute, he already obtained the fourth layer after half a year. Afterwards, he cultivated for another half year and should already be reaching the Paragon stage. Now, Li Yang trained for another period of time, and with Li Yang's frightening absorption speed of worldly spiritual essence, moreover with the assistance of Overlord Xiang Yu, Paragon stage shouldn't be too far off.

"En. Youngster, your Xiantian qi should be roughly 9000 crystals now. Haha, keep earnestly cultivating brat, after breaking through the fifth layer, Overlord will give you a nice surprise!" Xiang Yu happily said.

Li Yang spent the night completely on internal cultivation, and during the day, other than training with his steel marbles, he would be in Taibai Restaurant drinking alcohol. His relationship with the boss of the restaurant Ge Pu gradually became much better.

"Mu Yi you came! Come, come, old brother will accompany you to drink a bit!" When Ge Pu saw Li Yang, he happily grabbed a few bottles and walked over. Li Yang glanced over at Tian Gang who was drinking in a corner alone, and felt that it was almost as if each time he came to Taibai Restaurant, Tian Gang would be there.

Li Yang did not pay much attention to it, and walked towards the second floor with Ge Pu before entering a private room.

"Old brother, I still haven't asked you. Is it just you and your wife? You don't have kids?" Li Yang smiled while asking.

"I have, of course I have. Me and my wife have a girl named Ge Xin. Xin Xin is currently at New York University studying, and comes back once a week. Last time when she came back, you weren't able to meet her. Truly, hehe, Mu Yi ah, my girl is quite a beauty. You brat better not have any bad intentions!" When Ge Pu mentioned his own daughter, that deep paternal love could be felt. It seems like Ge Pu really is a bit excessively fond of his own daughter.

"You don't know how formidable my daughter is. Do you know that this year, she received the first place scholarship?" Ge Pu was shoving off in front of Li Yang, and it was obvious that he was proud of her daughter.

...

At night, Li Yang returned to the villa. In the past when Li Yang was still in Shanghai, he lived alone. Now that he was once again living alone, he liked peace and quiet, and didn't like noise.

"I've trained for such a long time, and the marbles' strength have barely reached a satisfactory level. Let's see if there are any good missions to accept!" Li Yang walked into his bedroom and looked at turned on his computer. He went on the designated assassin website, and immediately after opening up the page, a garbage adult webpage showed up. Li Yang

did not mind, and logged in with his assassin account name and password. The webpage immediately changed, and changed into the same page as the one he saw with the assassin organization intermediary.

"Oh, the highest assassination mission is only fifty million, it really is quite disappointing." Li Yang clearly did not care much for fifty million, but right when he was muttering, the page suddenly refreshed, and a mission with a red font appeared.

"One billion dollars! How is this possible? Is something wrong with my vision?" Li Yang blankly stared at the mission in front of his eyes. Typically, the highest mission would only at most reward around 100 million. Now that a billion dollar mission appeared, was the other party someone who specialized in manufacturing money?

Book 2 Chapter 5 Pt. 1 – One Billion Dollars

Li Yang carefully looked at the never before seen 'billion dollar' mission. The target of this mission was the chairman of the Kangbei Group, and in addition, a photograph of this chairman was attached.

This was a blonde, blue eyed male whose body emanated nobility. His figure was excellent, and had a triangular upper body. Although his muscles weren't protruding out, Li Yang could tell from the proportions of the male that he was definitely an expert who cultivated his physical body. Moreover, his physical body power was even more powerful than that of Li Yang's.

Right, from merely a single picture and barely being able to see the body's proportions, Li Yang was able to come to this conclusion.

"My body has been under the gravity restriction this entire time, and have constantly resisted the force of 5000 jin. My physical body's power has increased by quite a bit, and is now at roughly 20,000 jin. However, this Kangbei chairman seems to be more powerful than me, but is he really that powerful?" Li Yang began to doubt his previous judgment. After all, he had 20,000 crystals of energy. In the underground world, even those who used the B1 gene medicine were barely a few thousand crystals.

"Li Yang, wait. Let Overlord use his Divine Awareness to carefully search over New York and examine this individual's true strength!" Overlord Xiang Yu's words gave Li Yang a pleasant surprise.

Overlord Xiang Yu was still worried that the Immortal Realm's people

would discover him, and didn't dare to use too much energy. Currently, the most energy he would use would be that of an Ascension stage expert's. However, his Divine Awareness was still something that only an Immortal or Devil at the second stage could possess, and it was still a grade above the Spirit Awareness. Within the mortal world, there wasn't a single person who could avoid Xiang Yu's investigation.

When Li Yang heard this, he couldn't help but smile as he waited for the results of Xiang Yu's examination.

After roughly a minute, Xiang Yu finally spoke. "My goodness! Li Yang ah, there are quite a few experts within New York. There is surprisingly an individual at the Nascent Soul stage, and in addition, there is more than one! You are definitely not equal to these individuals, and they could exterminate you easily!"

Wasn't this a waste of words? Xiantian Paragons were fifth stage experts, and Golden Dan stage experts were sixth stage experts. Nascent Soul cultivators were seventh-rank experts!

Seventh stage... individuals at that level had several million crystals of energy. They were stronger than Li Yang by more than a hundred times, and Li Yang obviously could not be compared to them. To exterminate ten of Li Yang would still be an extremely easy task.

However, Li Yang instead became urgent. "Overlord, have you found out the strength of the fellow with the bounty?" This was what Li Yang wanted to find out the most. Why would he care about how many experts New York had? After all, New York was the headquarter of the underground world, and for such a place to have many experts was a normal thing.

Overlord Xiang Yu immediately proudly said, "Of course I found out. If not for the careful examination of these top-notch experts, to solely look for this fellow would only take a single breath!"

Li Yang urgently wanted to know the answer, yet Xiang Yu unexpectedly paused for a moment and rested for a while, purposely suspending Li Yang in curiosity. Only after seeing that Li Yang was about to explode did he leisurely say, "This fellow is what you guys call a werewolf, in addition, he is at the highest stage of werewolves — Wolf Monarch, a seventh rank expert. According to Overlord's careful observations, this fellow has already reached the peak of the seventh rank. His energy is roughly nine million crystals, and after searching all of New York, there aren't many who are worthy of being his opponent!"

When Li Yang heard this, he immediately became stupefied!

Werewolves were separated into Low-rank Werewolf, Mid-rank Werewolf, High-rank Werewolf, Wolf General, and Wolf Monarch. These five ranks corresponded respectively from third rank experts to seventh rank experts.

At the same time, the Blood Clans were split into Baron rank, Viscount rank, Earl rank, Marquis rank, and Duke rank. These five great ranks were separated from third rank expert to seventh rank expert. Within the Blood Clans, the chief would be known as the 'Prince', and was the most powerful of the vampires. An expert at the rank of a Prince would be at the peak of the seventh rank, but they would still be below the eighth rank.

Typically, experts at the sixth or seventh rank were not people who could be provoked. Within the underground powers, for example the Japanese Dual Flowers, the highest would be an expert at the fifth rank, and the most formidable expert within the Russian Exterminators was also at the fifth rank. Even the number one bodyguard company, Black Devil, only had eight supreme bodyguards at the fifth rank.

Sixth rank experts within the underground world were more or less unrivaled, and as for seventh rank experts, they were experts that only existed in rumors.

Then what about eighth rank experts? Legends had it that the werewolves' sovereign — Wolf Emperor, and the Blood Clan's sovereign — the Blood Clan Regent, were both eighth rank experts. However, the Wolf Emperor and the Blood Clan Regent hadn't appeared in several thousand years, and they only existed in the memories of the werewolves and vampires.

Of course, there were definitely eighth rank experts who were still alive. Those would be Eastern China's true way cultivators; their tribulation stage experts. The only thing was that these cultivators rarely meddled with worldly affairs.

"Heavens, seventh rank expert. This, this, they are simply unrivaled! The one billion dollars is rather alluring, but a seventh rank expert is way more terrifying! Most likely even if the entire Security Bureau moved out, they wouldn't even be able to move a single hair on him. Seventh rank!" Li Yang's eyes were wide open.

Immediately, Li Yang seemed to have remembered something, and suddenly asked, "Overlord, what did you just say? There are still several

other seventh rank experts in New York?" Only now did Li Yang pay attention to the important information that Xiang Yu included just now.

Overlord Xiang Yu replied, "En, there are quite a few of them. Within them, there is your Vampire Duke, as well as a few from the Church. Their energy is what you know of as holy force. Right, the Church's people are comparatively more difficult to defeat, and it's because they are wearing a set of battle armor, a copper set of battle armor. Lin Tianyu's strength is not strong, and only at roughly sixth rank. However, this Church warrior is actually at the seventh rank, and has a golden-colored battle armor!"

When Li Yang heard this information, his brows immediately locked up deeply. "Could it be that Lin Tianyu is one of the Church's holy warriors? That's can't be, according to the information within the Security Bureau, bronze rank holy warriors are equivalent to a fifth stage expert, how did he reach the sixth rank?" Now, Li Yang understood why Lin Tianyu was so formidable at such a young age; it was because of the bronze battle armor.

The Church's armed forces organization — Religious Law. Religious Law's most powerful forces were the holy warriors, however, holy warriors mainly relied on the battle armor's energy, and each set of battle armor was extremely precious. It was because Holy Forest group was a subsidiary of the Church that Lin Tianyu got a bronze set of battle armor.

Li Yang bitterly shook his head. It was still better to be realistic, and to first accumulate strength before anything else. However, other than accumulating strength, having money was still incredibly important! However currently, there was a billion dollars in front of him, yet he did not have the strength to obtain it yet. The person who issued this mission most likely never thought that there was anyone who could actually kill this seventh rank expert either. After all, this Wolf Monarch was at the

peak of the seventh rank, and was comparable to the Vampire Prince!

"Li Yang, if you really want this billion dollars, it's not like there is no way. As long as Overlord helps you, there wouldn't be any problems. Isn't it only a seventh rank expert?" Overlord Xiang Yu's voice was full of disdain towards the seventh rank expert, and displayed his arrogance!

Book 2 Chapter 5 Pt. 2 – One Billion Dollars

"You are saying that you are willing to help me kill the target of this mission, a seventh rank Wolf Monarch?" Li Yang appeared to be doubting Xiang Yu's words. After all, Xiang Yu once said that in the future, Li Yang had to take care of his matters alone, and could not rely on Xiang Yu.

Xiang Yu previously said those thing because he was worried that Li Yang would rely on him too much, and that depending on others wasn't good for one's mental cultivation. In addition, if one relied excessively on others, the growth of their own strength would be slow as well. That was why he told Li Yang that in the future, he had to deal with his matters himself.

Only by facing difficulties and challenges alone, by unearthing one's own potential, and by breaking through one's own limits could one acquire greater achievements.

This meant that what Xiang Yu said in the past should be sensible, however, the current Overlord Xiang Yu said he would help him, wasn't he contradicting himself?

"Li Yang ah, just don't worry about it. Although Overlord has said before that you should take care of your own matters, there are still special circumstances. For example, this werewolf that has reached the Wolf Monarch stage. Even if I allowed you to face him alone, could you defeat him? For you to defeat him, it's simply an impossible task, and you would gain no benefits. When selecting opponents, you only need to choose those who are a bit more powerful than you, and only those are suitable for you to fight against. When fighting against them, you could unearth a greater amount of potential! Fighting against those who were far stronger is not self-discipline, but rather asking for death!" reprimanded Overlord Xiang Yu.

When Li Yang heard this, he also thought that this was reasonable. What level of physical body strength did a werewolf who reached the Wolf Monarch have? It was highly likely that Li Yang's Flying Daggers would not be able to hurt him. If even his most powerful Flying Daggers could not inflict any damage, wouldn't Li Yang just be seeking death?

"What Overlord said is still reasonable, however, I believe that only under pressure would one be able to more easily break through one's own restraints and enter a higher boundary! That's why when I face the werewolf, I will first depend on my own strength. After completely bringing out my own potential, I will continuously extract my own strength to fight the opposing party. If I lose, then at that time, Overlord can take action. Overlord, what do you think?" Li Yang definitely did not want to let any opportunities that could potentially increase his strength go.

"En, this is acceptable as well. This way will benefit you and give you more breakthroughs!" Overlord Xiang Yu expressed his approval.

Li Yang suddenly said in a strange tone, "This... Overlord, when it reaches the point where I completely lose, what happens if I get killed by that Wolf Monarch? Of course, it isn't that I don't trust Overlord, just that you also understand that a physical body cultivator is extremely fast. That werewolf purely cultivates his physical body, and he has a seventh rank physical body. How frightening is that, his speed will definitely have reached an incomprehensible speed. If I even make the slightest miscalculations, I fear that he will kill me in the blink of an eye. Overlord needs to be especially careful."

Overlord Xiang Yu stared blankly for a period of time, and then he howled furiously within Li Yang's mind, "You muddle-headed brat, what kind of person was Overlord back in the devil realm? For ascension stage cultivators, just a wave of my hand could kill over ten thousand of them. Now that Overlord is like a fallen tiger, whose primordial spirit can't even absorb much energy, and can only absorb roughly the amount of an ascension stage cultivator, you don't think Overlord can protect you anymore? Even if his speed was as fast as lightning, under Overlord's divine awareness, it might as well be a snail crawling past. You should be 120% relaxed!" Overlord Xiang Yu's angry tone was extremely obvious.

"I won't say anymore then, and prepare to accept this mission!" Li Yang did not want to talk back to the angry Overlord, and immediately looked towards the computer screen. He moved his mouse and clicked a few times, accepting the mission!

Suddenly, a prompt appeared on top of his computer!

"Your rank is not high enough, unable to accept this mission!"

Lifeless. Li Yang's face was lifeless as he stared distractedly.

"What happened? Why can't I accept this mission? Insufficient rank? What does that mean?" Li Yang immediately opened up a web page that explained the process of accepting assassination missions.

Assassination missions were divided into four ranks. C rank missions — hundred thousand dollars to nine hundred ninety thousand dollar missions. B rank missions — 1 million dollar missions to 9 million nine hundred ninety thousand dollar missions. A rank — 10 million dollar missions to ninety nine million dollar missions. S rank — one hundred million dollar or higher missions.

Assassins were similarly divided into C, B, A and S rank.

Each assassin could only accept missions their rank and below. For example, a C rank assassin could only accept C rank missions, and a S rank assassin could accept any mission.

An assassin's rank and their actual strength were unrelated, and only corresponded to the missions they could undertake.

After completing ten C rank missions, a C rank assassin would be promoted to B rank.

After completing ten B rank missions, a B rank assassin would be promoted to A rank.

After completing ten A rank missions, an A rank assassin would be promoted to S rank.

"Fuck!" After staring at it for a long time, Li Yang swore out in anger.

While he was feeling disappointed, a bitter feeling rushed to his head. After seeing the billion dollars in reach (Within Li Yang's heart, he believed that as long as he had Overlord's help, that Wolf Monarch mission was going to be completed with certainty), it unexpectedly stated that his rank wasn't high enough.

Li Yang finally understood what that account name 'Assassin Bullet — C rank' meant!

In the end, this couldn't be helped. After all, S rank missions were quite rare, and when one appears, many people would want to accept it. With so many people trying to grab it, who deserved to be the one to receive it? In addition, with the difficulty of S rank missions, ordinary assassins wouldn't be able to complete it. To allow all assassins to be able to accept it, assassins of various strength would just die one after another. At the same time, the person who issued the mission would also be dissatisfied, after all, a lot of time would be wasted.

For the sake of efficiency, as well as reinforcing the competition between assassins, this system was created.

"I currently need to complete ten C rank, ten B rank, and ten A rank missions. Only like this would I meet the requirements to accept this S rank mission. However, missions aren't always available, especially the higher ranked ones. It seems like there are only six A ranked missions available, and they are all currently being carried out." Li Yang became increasingly depressed.

Suddenly, Li Yang sighed, and shortly after, he laughed. "Forget it, I won't try to fool myself any longer. A Wolf Monarch ranked werewolf, some other assassin can try to complete it. Even if the mission is accepted, they would only die!" Li Yang could not accept the mission, and could only have these ill thoughts towards others.

Wengwengweng... His cellphone vibrated, and Li Yang answered shortly after.

"Dear Mu Yi, this is Old Jack. Your first underground boxing arena match has already been scheduled. The day after tomorrow at eight in the evening, underground boxing arena headquarter arena number three. Oh, right, when I reported your squatting and bench press results, I slightly reduced your results by a bit. Others will think that you are only an ordinary boxer, and so the boxing arena's gambling pool will be greater. Should we bet a bit? I, Old Jack, know that Mu Yi will definitely win, and in addition, the opponent I scheduled you against is the number one within the high division boxers. Your compensation will definitely not be low, so let's take this opportunity to earn a bit, what do you think?"

Book 2 Chapter 6 Pt. 1 – Fight

Although the Underground Boxing Arena had certain rules prohibiting one from gambling on one's own fight, not many people actually followed it. After all, fighters could just send another person to bet in their place.

"Old Jack, I still have two million here. Help me place it all on the fight." Li Yang had a slight smile on his face. Although he had to give up on a billion dollars, he could participate in this gamble to make some small money.

Li Yang hung up the phone, and looked outside the room. It was already eight or nine in the evening, and it was once again time for his internal cultivation.

Shortly after, Li Yang sat with his legs crossed on top of his bed. After training thus far, Li Yang's heaven and earth spiritual essence was already much thicker than in the past. Wave after wave of worldly spiritual essence converged from the Manhattan skies and endlessly flowed into Li Yang's body. Under Overlord Xiang Yu's help, Li Yang's heaven and earth absorption speed became even more astonishing, and a strip of dense green-colored essence stream revolved around Li Yang's body as if it were a ribbon...

Suddenly, a wave of spiritual awareness swept over Li Yang's location, as the spiritual awareness' owner felt Manhattan's spiritual essence fluctuate. Although Li Yang's heaven and earth spiritual essence absorption was only a small part compared to all of Manhattan's spiritual essence, the amount of cultivators in Manhattan was small to begin with.

Li Yang's absorption of spiritual essence was extremely fast, and ended up being noticed by this cultivator.

"Li Yang, a cultivator is currently probing you?" Overlord Xiang Yu laughed as he spoke.

Li Yang was startled, and he immediately paused his cultivation, and he felt a bit suspicious within his heart. "A cultivator? Overlord, there are cultivators even here? In the past, haven't I always cultivated like this? Why hasn't anyone probed me before?"

"Don't be in such a hurry, let Overlord mislead him a bit first!" Overlord Xiang Yu casually cast a technique under Taibai Restaurant — Spirit Gathering Formation. This Spirit Gathering Formation continuously caused the heaven and earth spiritual essence to flood towards Taibai Restaurant.

Due to Li Yang abruptly stopping, as well as the fact that the wave of spirit awareness was rushing over to this area, it did not manage to discover that the source of the worldly spiritual essence absorption originated from Li Yang's villa.

...

Chinatown, a room within a simple and unadorned building.

A white robed elderly man was currently sitting cross-legged on a mat, and suddenly the old man's eyes opened. A strand of sharp gaze that looked like knife radiance suddenly lit up the room, and the elder seemed

to be a bit confused. He shook his head and said, "Truly strange, that Taibai Restaurant even I've been to before. How come I never noticed this wondrous Spirit Gathering Formation in the past? The individual who laid down this formation has knowledge far surpassing mine! Eh... within this Spirit Gathering Formation, one's cultivation speed will greatly increase. Even ordinary people can extend their longevity! In the future, I must often go to observe!"

Although Overlord Xiang Yu did not spend much time on formation laying, nor was he extremely proficient at it, this 'not proficient' was only when it was compared to experts at his level within the immortal realm. In the past when Overlord fought with numerous immortal realm experts, he fought against all different types of formations. Even if he wasn't proficient at them, he was definitely familiar. What kind of powerful formations did Overlord Xiang Yu face? Even if he casually threw one out now, it would still leave these cultivators dumbstruck.

"Master, you've just returned from your journey, and disciple shouldn't be bothering you. However, just now, the assassin organization came out with a never before seen billion dollar mission, and the target is the Kangbei group's chairman. It is also the one that master has described previously as the Wolf Monarch rank werewolf who is at the peak of the seventh rank. I'm not quite sure how we should handle this mission? Should we just allow the assassin organization intermediaries to revoke this mission? After all, it is incredibly difficult to prevail over a Wolf Monarch rank werewolf!" A muddled and thick voice sounded out from outside the elderly man's room.

The elder thought for a bit, and then replied, "There's no need to be anxious. The assassin organization allows assassins from around the world to accept missions in an uncomplicated manner. The only things we should worry about doing is making sure that the guest who gave out

this mission is satisfied, and that whoever accepts this mission is satisfied as well. As long as we do these, then it can be counted as a success. As for other things, we don't need to worry about them!"

"Understood!" The voice outside the room affirmed.

...

During the evening, the Underground Boxing Arena welcomed a new fighter.

There were new fighters that came almost every day, and these complacent boxers who wished to earn large amounts of money all wanted to reveal their powers. However, they lacked experience, and so typically, the athletes would all choose a rather weak boxer as their opponent. Only after gaining experience would they slowly choose more formidable boxers.

However, this evening was different. Today, the high division boxing competition welcomed a new boxer whose target was unexpectedly the current number one within the high division. This was the 'lunatic' Shaq, who was on the verge of becoming a top division boxer.

'Lunatic' Shaq's strength was powerful, and even if he were to fight within the top division, he would still be considered rather formidable. Within the high division competitions, there basically wasn't anyone who could be his opponent. Due to the regulations set by the Underground Boxing Arena, no matter how formidable he was, at most he could enter the high division competition. Although Lunatic Shaq's strength was comparable to that of a top division boxer's, he was hindered by the

underground boxing arena's rules, and could only fight in the high division competition.

The underground boxing arena's rules: Only by fighting through thirty fights in a certain division could you enter a higher division of competition. Each boxer must undergo at least ten fights a year.

'Lunatic' fought twenty fights in merely six months, and absolutely swept the scene. Everyone believed that Lunatic Shaq could definitely complete the task of thirty fights within a single year, and enter into the top division.

Hou... A loud roar rang out, and a large and robust African-american stoop on top of the boxing arena, and roared towards the spectators below...

"Shaq, murder that new fellow! Let him understand what is a boxer, kill him!"

"Shaq, teach that new fellow a lesson! Crack open his brain, let him know your power!"

...

From below, loud shouts continuously rang out. All the rich and powerful individuals ripped off their ties and unbuttoned their shirts. They yelled until their voices became hoarse, and in their hands they waved their gambling vouchers. Currently, they weren't individuals from the upper class, but rather beasts who wished to see slaughter.

All the woman's expressions similarly flushed red, and they incessantly shouted. The typically noble temperament vanished completely.

After Shaq roared a few times, he complacently glanced at Li Yang below in disdain. Soon after, he sat down at his corner of the boxing arena.

The boxing arena judge stood on top of the arena, and spoke in a loud voice, "Ladies and gentleman, I will now introduce to you today's contestants. You all are quite familiar with this individual, he is... the one who brings slaughter, the one who brings us excitement, Shaq, Lunatic Shaq!!!!!!" The judge's voice suddenly rose, and Li Yang who was standing below thought that this fellow's voice might be higher than those world renowned tenor vocalists.

The rich dames immediately began to scream, and they madly waved the vouchers within their hands.

"His opponent is a newcomer — an individual who originated from China, Mu Yi! An individual who just entered the Underground Boxing Arena! As a newcomer, although he lacks experience, his true strength has not been revealed yet. His agent is Old Jack, and there aren't many weak fighters under him, so I believe this newcomer will be quite formidable, as he might be worth betting on!" The judge's voice seemed to not be able to reach any higher, and it was obvious that he did not have much confidence in Li Yang. After all, his opponent was the experienced and tyrannical 'Lunatic' Shaq.

'Oh, my gambling compensation rate is actually one to four!' LI Yang's

brows lifted, and his expression seemed rather strange. He felt both happy and helpless, helpless that no one could realize that he was an expert, and happy that he was going to make quite a bit.

Li Yang wore a black shirt, and as if he completely completely ignored the spectators, he slowly and unhurriedly walked onto the boxing arena.

Following a sharp bell sound, the fight immediately began. Like a cunning rabbit, that judge lept off the stage.

"Drop dead, little brat!" The over two meters tall Shaq looked at the opposing Li Yang who was a head shorter than him. With a cruel laugh, he drew near Li Yang with a few steps, and his thick and solid leg suddenly brought with it a powerful wind sound, and with a shua sound, it rushed towards Li Yang.

From the moment he stepped onto the stage, Li Yang continuously looked at Shaq with a callous expression. It was to the point where even when that thick and solid leg shot towards his head, Li Yang still cool-headedly looked at his opponent. Suddenly, Li Yang's eyes opened, and a cold light flashed past...

Book 2 Chapter 6 Pt. 2 – Fight

Shaq had a bloodthirsty look in his eyes, and the strength behind that thick and solid leg became a bit stronger. The wind created from the leg's strength made the rich dames below excitedly shout out even more so. Shaq laughed, as he saw there there was only a few centimeters left

between his leg and Li Yang's head...

Li Yang who previously never shifted from his position since the beginning of the match suddenly moved, and Li Yang's body seemed like a phantom. Li Yang easily dodged past the kick, and his body charged forward. His right leg at once smashed into Shaq's abdomen.

Iron Knee Collision!

Peng! Li Yang's right leg firmly smashed into Shaq's abdomen. The expression on Shaq's face turned strange, as if he couldn't believe what was currently happening. "How, how is this possible? Just, just now, wasn't my leg only a few centimeters away from him? He... how could he be so fast? Imp-impossible!" Currently, Shaq's heart was incessantly frenetic.

Before Shaq could even react, Li Yang's figure once again sped up, and the knee that smashed into Shaq's abdomen rotated, and with a sharp huhu sound, Li Yang's left leg brought with it an incredible power. It rotated a hundred and eighty degrees, and ruthlessly smashed into Shaq's body.

Rear Revolving Kick!

Li Yang's powerful left leg carried a formidable amount of strength, and ferociously collided with Shaq's body. This all happened while Shaq was still in shock, and before he could even react.

Hong!

And just like a sandbag, after being hit by Li Yang's Rear Revolving kick, he was violently sent flying! He was sent flying with a kick just like that! Shaq flew high into the air, and his stiff body flew more than ten meters from the stage from Li Yang's powerful kick.

Pu! Shaq's blood began to spill out as if it was cheap water, and the blood danced across the overhead.

All of the rich dames below suddenly became silent, and there wasn't a single sound uttered. At this moment, everyone seemed to be completely distracted, and the previous shrieking and shouting all got stuck in their throats. They all looked as if they had just reached their climax, and were all shuddering. Each and every one of them stared with their eyes wide as they looked at the scene in front of them in disbelief.

Hong! Soon after Shaq's huge body powerlessly dropped to the ground, the arena suddenly erupted in chaos. All of the rich and powerful spectators began to yell out in a loud voice.

"Mu!"

"Mu!"

...

In just a split second, Li Yang became the focus of their thoughts. They completely forgot the previously revered Lunatic Shaq, and now they were crazy for Li Yang; crazy for Li Yang's kick!

To directly send a boxer flying with a single kick?

Was there ever such a thing before in the underground boxing arena? No one is sure, however, even if there was such an instance in history, it absolutely would not be as clean and efficient as the way Li Yang did it, and stir up their emotions like this. Moreover, Li Yang overturned the tides in an instant right before his moment of death, and he gained a clean cut victory.

"Oh!!! The victor is our newcomer to the high division — originating from the eastern unfathomable China, Mu Yi! Oh! He is a genius, definitely a genius within our Underground Boxing Arena! I have never before seen such a powerful Rear Revolving Kick, it really holds a formidable power! A great earthquake will definitely shake the Underground Boxing Arena, and our future days will definitely hold more passion because of Mu Yi! Let's shout out loudly for his future!" The judge immediately got up onto the stage, once again hollering with his loud voice. The microphone even more so allowed his voice to spread out towards the entire area.

Immediately, loud cheers penetrated the entire stadium, and none of the spectators paid any attention to the previously arrogant Lunatic Shaq. The Underground Boxing Arena was cruel in this way. One second, you could be enjoying the cheers of others and be earning enormous amounts of money, however in the next moment you could lose everything.

"Oh, esteemed Mister Mu Yi, please give us some of your thoughts. Let everyone feel your excitement!" That judge said towards Li Yang.

Li Yang's face only revealed a strange smile. "Excitement?" Li Yang could not understand, as he didn't even use a tenth of his body's strength. Wasn't it just casually beating a fellow with 1,100 crystals? Was it really worth Li Yang becoming excited? This really was a joke!

Li Yang's physical body's energy was already nearing 20,000 crystals, and even if he used a tenth of his power, that would still be 2,000 crystals. The top division boxers all had more than 1,000 crystals of energy, however, none of them reached 2,000 crystals yet. Even if it was an expert at the level of the Demon King, he would still be under 2,000 crystals. By deciding that he would only reveal a tenth of his strength, Li Yang had already became absolutely unrivaled within the Underground Boxing Arena!

Threads of ice-cold aura weaved around Li Yang's surroundings, and that was a coldness that stretched for a thousand miles. This was a natural aura, and it was a feeling that other people felt within their hearts! From the moment he walked onto the arena until the current moment, he had stood there cold and detached. It seemed as if the kick that sent Shaq flying didn't even happen, or in Li Yang's words, couldn't even be called a kick.

Li Yang glanced over at the judge who was waiting for him to say a few words, and the cold light from his eyes made the judge feel fear within his heart. The judge's heart immediately felt a wave of dread.

Li Yang loftily looked at the spectators below, and suddenly...

Hu! Li Yang's right leg horizontally kicked outwards, and the terrifying leg strength immediately compressed the surrounding air. Following the direction where Li Yang kicked, it was as if the compressed air developed

substance as it charged forwards.

With a hong sound, Li Yang's kick slammed into one of the arena's pillars, creating a boom.

The wind created from the kick, was equivalent to a kick from the actual body.

When the speed of a kick reached a terrifying realm, the air will not be able to flow in time, being compressed. The compressed air will then continuously compress, and following the kick, and wind will result from the kick. This wind kick will be just as powerful as an actual kick.

Wind that forms as a result of normal kicks will only be ordinary, and the wind that results from this type of kicks is not that strong. However, after being compressed, the wind kick will possess a terrifying amount of strength. In addition, when the attack reaches the opponent, the compressed air will explode!

Seeing the stupefied spectators below, Li Yang stood above the arena and looked down at them.

"I, am undefeatable!"

Li Yang's cold voice resonated within the entire boxing arena stadium. Before entering the Underground Boxing Arena, he had already thought thing through. He had to display an absolute strength in front of all of the Underground Boxing Arena's spectators. This was also for the sake of laying the ground for his future plans.

Only after a period of time did the spectators snap back to reality. Only now did their minds register what they had just seen!

That judge also woke up from his stupor, and immediately shouted in a loud voice, "Oh! Heavens, that is an air explosion, definitely an air explosion! Only three fighters in the entire Underground Boxing Arena knows how to use this supreme skill. From today forth, there will finally be a fourth user of this skill! How terrifying would the speed of your kick have to be to produce such a terrifying wind kick? Such a powerful air explosion, oh, ladies and gentleman, let's cheer for Mu Yi!"

"Mu!"

"Mu!"

...

Li Yang walked down from the stage, and he had the same callous expression from before. When Old Jack saw Li Yang walk off the stage, he immediately ran towards him. Old Jack seemed to be a bit happy, as well as a bit resentful. "My dear Mu Yi, how can you reveal so much strength? You should have 'barely' defeated that Lunatic Shaq, that way, we can make more money off of future bets! By attacking with such strength, it really was a foolish choice, and lost us a great deal of money!"

Li Yang suddenly faintly smiled, and glanced at the sour faced Old Jack. "There is a limit to how much one can bet in a fight, and that amount of money is not something that I care about. Moreover, my goal of entering the Underground Boxing Arena is to become the Demon King."

Book 2 Chapter 7 Pt. 1 – Underground World

England's Lin clan's official residence.

"What?! There's actually someone who placed a bounty on my Lin family's clansmen!" Currently, Lin Tianyu looked like a beggar as he yelled into the phone. Just now, the car he was returning back in was targeted by a rocket launcher! Fortunately, the bronze battle armor Lin Tianyu wore within his body displayed its might, and together with Lin Tianyu running away quickly, he was able to preserve his life. However, his favorite boyfriend Ding Yuyang was killed in that accident, and currently, Lin Tianyu was simply in a deranged state.

Suddenly, Lin Tianyu took a deep breath and leaned against the couch. He held a cigar between his fingers, and after taking a breath, he returned to his usual state.

"Does the old man know of this news?" Lin Tianyu spoke of his grandfather, and he was also the founder of Holy Forest group. If there was a person Lin Tianyu feared, then it would be his grandfather Lin Aotian. As for his father, Lin Tianyu always looked down on him in disdain.

"The old man has already been informed on this news. During these past few days, several assassination attempts have happened. The old man has already asked his old friend to look into who gave out this mission!" replied a voice from within the phone.

Lin Tianyu's brows deeply furrowed. He was not worried about his grandparents, as the old couple rarely left the clan, making it rather difficult for outsiders to attack them. If the assassins wanted to make

some money, then they would have to target his parents, his sister, or himself.

"My mother and father should still be okay, right? Wait, what about my sister who always changes boyfriends? How is she?" Lin Tianyu continued to ask.

The voice on the phone paused for a while, and only after a long time did it continue, "Nothing happened to the family lord, as he has the most bodyguards within the entire city. However, madam, she..."

Lin Tianyu immediately became anxious, and said, "What exactly happened to my mother?" Lin Tianyu began to feel a bit frightened within his heart, and although he did not care much about his father, he cared a lot about his mother. His father was a womanizer to the point where he even brought other women back with him.

He still recalled that one year when his father recklessly used his powers as the family lord to bring back a woman from mainland China. Moreover, within the family, he openly declared that this was his second lady! In addition, that woman from mainland China had a child, and Lin Tianyu's father was absolutely devoted to that illegitimate child, and favored him over Lin Tianyu. That year, the young Lin Tianyu already felt that this illegitimate child would threaten his future. However, as a child, he could do nothing, and could only watch the illegitimate child's status climb higher and higher!

The impression that Lin Tianyu's mother gave everyone was always a woman from a wealthy family, gentle and noble. However, it was this very same person that displayed her might, and within a single night, that 'second lady' and her illegitimate child disappeared, never to be seen

again. No one knew what exactly happened that day, and since then, the aggressive and grand Lin family lord no longer had his former drive. He began to slowly fall into depression, and the family matters began to fall into Lin Tianyu's hands.

"Madam only suffered a serious injury, and her life is not in danger. Young master does not need to worry!" The words that sounded from within the phone made Lin Tianyu release a slight breath of relief.

"As for the young miss, young master even more so does not need to worry. During these past few years, who knows how many men she has played tricks on. Even now, there are still countless assassins pursuing her, yet none have succeeded yet. However, the young miss should slow down, as changing boyfriends like this isn't a good thing!" The voice within the phone seemed to be extremely concerned about this lady.

Lin Tianyu spoke, "Uncle Lan, Ah Jiao's character is something you understand, and she always talks about having freedom. Don't talk about her matters anymore, Uncle Lan, you should also quickly put my family's power into effect. You must find out who sent out that mission!"

"Right, young master, the assassin organization is backed by the Green Mercenaries and the American Mafia, two of the world's five greatest syndicates. With the amount of influence our Holy Forest Group has, they wouldn't care much about us, and would definitely not break their rules and reveal their clients for us. This individual who issued the mission to defeat our family works in the dark, and we are in the light. It really is rather difficult to deal with!" Uncle Lan seemed to be facing some difficulties.

Lin Tianyu also understood. Although his Holy Forest Group was not a

small organization, it was not worth mentioning in front of the world's five great organizations. Any of the five great syndicates could easily exterminate his Holy Forest Group.

"Uncle Lan, just do your best! If there really is nothing we can do about this, then I'll ask the church to take action. To be disturbed all day by these assassins is not a small matter!"

"Right, our Holy Forest Group provides the church with so much money every year, so they should take action too. If the Church takes action, then the Green Mercenaries and American Mafia would definitely give some face!" Uncle Lan also approved Lin Tianyu's thinking.

"Then I'll leave you to those tasks, Uncle Lan. I'll hang up first!" Lin Tianyu hung up the phone, and deeply inhaled the smoke from his cigar before slowly exhaling. "No matter who you are, as long as you dare to stand against I, Lin Tianyu, and dare to oppose my Lin family, I will definitely find you and torture you to death!" Lin Tianyu's eyes contained the same cold look as the gaze of an African Forest Python's.

After the competition, Li Yang returned to his villa.

"The six million spent on the bounty just now was returned instantly. This gambling really does bring in money quick, especially when the results of the gamble is within the control of one's own hands!" Li Yang smiled and walked into his own villa.

Within the villa, there was a computer set up.

"I wonder what the results of that billion dollar S rank mission are? If I recall correctly, an S rank assassin accepted it a few days ago!" Li Yang coveted this billion dollars this entire time, and he always felt rather helpless about his own assassin rank. He didn't even have the chance to accept this mission.

He opened up the page containing the billion dollar mission, and all the assassins that accepted this mission were displayed.

"November 3rd, S rank assassin 'Value' accepted the mission. Three days later, 'Value' passed away, mission failed!"

"November 6th, S rank assassin 'Hero' accepted the mission, three days later, 'Hero' passed away, mission failed!"

"November 9th, S rank assassin 'Ferocious Man' accepted the mission, five days later, 'Ferocious Man' passed away, mission failed!"

...

"December 2nd, S rank assassin 'Battle God' accepted the mission, one day later, 'Battle God' passed away, mission failed!"

Li Yang inhaled a cold breath of air. Within roughly a month's worth of time, seven S rank assassins have continuously died. One has to understand that S rank assassins aren't normal people, and they've all completed ten rank A missions before becoming an S rank assassin. Their

assassination skills are all impossible to defend effectively against, so what did the deaths of seven S rank assassins mean?

This meant that Li Yang still had a chance!

"Haha, it seems like those S rank assassin are beginning to become scared. Otherwise, within these past twenty days, there wouldn't have been only four S rank assassins who died! En, I will first work hard and accept a few more missions to quickly attain S rank. Who knows, maybe by the time I reach S rank, this mission still might not be complete!

Book 2 Chapter 7 Pt. 2 – Underground World

An office within a Wall Street building.

Bao Bo was currently enjoying the service being provided by his beautiful and sexy secretary. As he looked at the blood red wine within his cup, as well as feeling the warmth from his lower body, not only did he feel rather satisfied with current life, the smile on his face also became even more splendid.

Bao Bo was a bandit within the financial world. Although he did not actually rob anyone, but because he had bankrupted quite a few companies, he had quite a few enemies, and his name was even on the assassin organization's list of names. In addition, it wasn't just a single mission!

One B rank mission, and two C rank mission, separated into three

missions with different issuers. The missions all asked for the assassination of Bao Bo, however, Bao Bo still lived his life comfortably because of his bodyguards. He had bodyguards from the number one bodyguard company — Black Devil Bodyguard Company. B rank and C rank assassin were still incapable of breaking through the Black Devil bodyguards' protection.

"Ah!" Bao Bo's body suddenly throbbed, immediately squirting everything into the sexy female secretary's mouth as he made a bright moan.

Xiu!

A flash of radiance passed by. "Ah!" The moaning Bao Bo suddenly opened his eyes wide, and there was a deep fear within its eyes. It was a fear of death, and upon his forehead was a bullet hole; a bullet hole that completely penetrated through his skull.

Li Yang who was in the corner of the office suddenly smiled, and the Xiantian qi within his body began to circulate. He made some hand seals, and immediately activated the Escape Technique, easily leaving.

That sexy female secretary was still showing off her moves, however, she found to her surprise that her boss did not show any reaction. Could it be that her movements weren't as good as before? The sexy secretary who was kneeling between Bao Bo's legs could not help but lift up her head to look towards her boss.

"Ah!" A shrill shriek suddenly resonated within the entire office building, and at the same time, the Black Devil bodyguards who were standing

outside ran in.

...

"It's a steel marble, and this steel marble actually completely penetrated through the skull. Its penetrating force is astonishing, and it should be a steel marble shot from a modified gun. In addition, this modified gun's firepower is extremely terrifying." A white male from the Black Devil Bodyguard Company muttered as he looked at the steel marble in his hand.

"How could it be? This office only has a single window, if it was shot from a gun, it had to be shot from the outside. However, this office is on the 59th floor, and there is basically no area that can shoot into this area. In addition, Mister Bao Bo's back was facing the window, so even if he did get shot, it would pierce through from the back. How could it have entered through the forehead?" said a black man from the Black Devil Bodyguard Company.

These two were high level bodyguards within the Black Devil Bodyguard Company, and they were experts who obtained the realm of fourth rank. They were invited by the cowardly Bao Bo after spending a large amount of money.

"Since the bullet entered from the forehead, that assassin must have been within the room. However, we were outside of the office the entire time. Could it be that he went into the office without us noticing, and then easily escaped after?" The white bodyguard clearly did not believe the assumption he just made.

"This situation seems to be rather difficult, let's report this to the upper authorities!" The black bodyguard spoke after thinking for a long time, and he released a discouraged sigh.

A client of the Black Devil Bodyguard Company actually got assassinated while under the protection of two bodyguards, and they weren't even alerted in the slightest while the assassination was carried out. This was definitely a humiliation, and it was a stain on the Black Devil Bodyguard's reputation. If the two bodyguards died, then it was fine since the enemy was too powerful. However, the two bodyguards were perfectly fine, and did not even see the assassin's shadow. The only explanation for this was that the Black Devil Bodyguard Company's protection was not satisfactory.

Li Yang activated the Escape Technique, and unhurriedly entered and left. Regardless of how great your protection was, Li Yang could still easily enter and assassinate his target before using the escape technique to calmly and unhurriedly leave. This Escape Technique was indeed an assassin's most useful tool.

...

A room within Li Yang's villa.

Oh, didn't I just complete a C rank mission?" Li Yang looked at the 3.6 million dollars on his card, and he was a bit confused. He only accepted a single C rank mission, and killing Bao Bo could earn him fifty thousand dollars with the assassin intermediary taking ten percent. He should have only received forty five thousand dollars.

IET: Intermediaries can only take ten million dollars, and if the mission surpassed a hundred million dollars, then the intermediary would only take ten million

Li Yang immediately opened up his computer and pulled up the assassin organization's webpage to ask the customer service about this matter.

"Mister Bullet, the 3.6 million dollars you received belongs to you. This is due to the fact that there were a total of three missions that had Bao Bo as the assassination target. Maybe Mister Bullet only saw one of the missions and did not see the other missions. Of the three missions, one was B rank, and two were C rank. The total sum for the missions was 4 million dollars, and after taking in the intermediary fees, Mister Bullet should have obtained 3.6 million dollars." The customer service representative gave Li Yang his answer.

"Then since I completed a B rank mission, is my assassin grade now B rank?" Li Yang asked unexpectedly.

"I must apologize, Mister Bullet! You accepted a C rank mission, and although you completed two other missions at the same time, we can only record down that you finished one C rank mission!"

Li Yang couldn't help but stare for a bit, and soon after helplessly closed the customer service window. He opened up the 'billion dollar' mission's web page.

These past few days, there would be one thing that Li Yang would do each night, and that was opening the 'billion dollar' mission's web page.

He would look to see who accepted this 'billion dollar' mission, as well as those assassins' results.

"Oh, another S rank assassin died. Ai, doesn't this fellow understand that this mission is incredibly dangerous? To still accept it, who can he blame but himself?" Li Yang looked at the mission status and couldn't help but sigh. However, Li Yang still felt a bit of happiness inside, after all, he would have a chance at the mission if no one could complete it.

...

The days passed one after another, and after Li Yang used the Escape Technique to easily assassinate his targets, the name 'Bullet' gradually became to circulate within the assassination world. Ten C rank missions were quickly completed, and Li Yang also began to climb the B rank assassination ranks.

As before, Li Yang continued to use the Escape Technique to carry out the missions, and all of his missions were conducted smoothly. No matter who it was, they were unable to resist his attacks, and the targets on the assassination organization's list became increasingly terrified. However, what greeted them was only a single steel marble, and no matter who the bodyguards were, they were unable to notice this mysterious 'Bullet' assassin's figure.

...

Early in the evening when the lanterns were first lit, the eight in the evening Manhattan glowed with brilliant multicolored lights.

Taibai Restaurant's business was quite excellent, and there were quite a few customers who came to enjoy their Chinese cuisine. As usual, Li Yang arrived at the second floor's private room, and the restaurant boss Ge Pu also happily ate and drank with him.

"Brother Ge, why are you in a suit today?" Li Yang seemed rather surprised. Through their interactions thus far, Li Yang learned that Ge Pu was an individual who was extremely fond of Chinese culture. Ge Pu typically always wore traditional Chinese robes, tang suits, and other Chinese clothes, moreover, by wearing these ancient Chinese clothes, the customers did not feel that it was strange at all. Moreover, they were rather fond of this boss who appreciated Chinese antiquities.

Ge Pu laughed while saying, "My daughter purchased this especially for me. How is it? Isn't it quite excellent?"

When Li Yang heard this, he immediately recalled that this Ge Pu doted on his daughter quite a bit, and when he was together with Li Yang, he would spend most of his time talking about his daughter. To cast aside his traditional Chinese clothes and wear a suit because of his daughter was not strange at all.

"Brother Ge really has a filial daughter!" Li Yang laughed as he praised, and he knew that in front of Ge Pu's face, he could only praise his daughter. Otherwise, even the good-natured Ge Pu would get angry.

Ge Pu was obviously proud. "Of course, how can my daughter be ordinary? Heng heng."

The private room had a window, and Li Yang was facing the window.

Suddenly, from the edge of his vision, Li Yang noticed a figure flashing past. Li Yang's expression could not help but change, and he immediately apologized to Ge Pu. "Brother Ge, I, Mu Yi have something to take care off. Today, I will have to leave first!"

Ge Pu also knew that Li Yang was not an ordinary person, and Li Yang was also not the type of person who liked doing things to save face. With a flash of his figure, he left through the window, soon after disappearing into the boundless night.

Book 2 Chapter 8 Pt. 1 – A Nice Surprise

"Sheep that has lost his way, separate yourselves from those who have sinned. The Lord will grant you forgiveness!" A warm voice rang out from within a Manhattan alley.

Tian Gang immediately furrowed his eyebrows, and the his muscles began to stretch taut. His internal qi began to madly circulate, and he carefully looked at the two people in front of him. There were two males, and one of them was dressed in white, while the other wore black. Tian Gang could tell whether or not they were from the underground world with just a single glance, and this black-clad male was a deacon from the Church's Court of Judgment, and the white clad male should be a priest of the Church who was second only to a Bishop.

What made Tian Gang the most helpless was that the black-clad male was a special deacon, and he clearly wasn't this deacon's match. The wound on his body inflicted by holy force was proof of his opponent's strength. If it wasn't because of his mysterious chinese movement technique, it would have been impossible for Tian Gang to run all the way here. However, the disparity in strength was too big, and moreover there were two who chased after him, and so he was still blocked in the end."

"Mister, there is no need for you to sacrifice yourself for us. These executioners from the Church don't have a single shred of humanity." A mixed-ethnicity woman walked beside Tian Gang, and her right hand formed a wolf claw. "Mister, as long as you bring my younger brother with you, then everything will be fine. My younger brother has not awokened yet, and does not possess any strength. Now that mother died, our hatred can only be justified by father. Mister, please send my younger

brother back to China, whether or not he could find father would depend on the heavens!" The mixed woman spoke pure mandarin, and her younger brother looked as if he was completely Chinese. Other than having a slight brown color in her hair, she did not look much different from a Chinese person either.

Tian Gang looked at the mixed girl, and his expression became even more firm. He moved his body in front of the girl's, and directly looked at the two people in front of him. There was an ominous glint within his eyes, and cursed in an overcast manner. "Church dogs!"

That black-clad male had a cold expression on his face, and said in a grim voice, "Since you are willingly allowing yourself to fall to such a level, then receive God's judgment!"

Yet Tian Gang had already taken action, and his body was like the wind. The qi within his body completely gathered at his right leg. Hu! The strength of both his qi and his muscles immediately erupted, and the air was immediately compressed, releasing a wind kick towards the black-clad male.

Hong!

It looked extremely similar to the wind kick that Li Yang shot towards that arena pillar, and Tian Gang's wind kick bombarded into the body of that black-clad male. However, the white-colored holy force surged, and immediately wrapped itself around his body. The explosion created from the wind kick did not harm the black-clad male in the slightest.

"Drop dead!" When the black-clad male had just blocked the explosion

created from the wind kick, Tian Gang's right leg had already supported a powerful force, and his entire body's qi blasted towards the black-clad male.

At the same time, the white-clad priest's holy force also began to surge, and rays after rays of holy force shot towards the mixed girl. The mixed girl also only awakened recently, and did not know how to use the power within her body. In addition, holy force specialized in restricted dark creatures like her, and so the mixed girl was in an extremely difficult predicament.

"Ah!" A stream of Holy Force shot towards the mixed girl, and along with a zizi sound, the mixed girl's abdomen was immediately burnt black.

When Tian Gang, who was using the Underground Boxing Arena's Death Leg Technique, heard that shout, he immediately felt anxious within his heart. The black-clad male immediately took advantage of the moment when Tian Gang became distracted, and his holy force immediately reached its peak. His hand formed a fist, and used his powerful holy force to ruthlessly smash into Tian Gang's chest. Tian Gang's internal qi automatically moved to protect his chest, however, Tian Gang's original strength was already a few levels below this special deacon's. Although the qi prevented Tian Gang from dying on the spot, the attack still caused him to fly into the air.

"Evil spirit, receive the cleansing of God!" The special deacon's face revealed a flash of cold light, and spoke with a divine voice. His hands immediately formed a pike created from holy force, and ferociously stabbed towards Tian Gang.

"Could it be that the first person I liked would result in this type of

conclusion?" Tian Gang's face had a bitter smile on it.

Ah!

A fearful cry suddenly rang out, and Tian Gang looked at the scene in front of him with a dumbstruck expression. The unbridled and aggressive special deacon unexpectedly... unexpectedly died. That special deacon's head was still rolling on the floor, and the wide and round eyes revealed a unreconciled and fearful expression.

Li Yang smiled as he stood in front of Tian Gang. Just now, he had used the Escape Technique to appear right behind the special deacon, and then he formed a qi blade. A qi blade formed from Xiantian qi surrounded his hand, and with a slash, the completely unprepared special deacon was immediately beheaded just like that.

"Right, there's still you!" Li Yang's figure flashed, and easily appeared beside the white-clad priest. The white-clad's close combat ability was incredibly weak, and he could only fire long ranged attacks behind the protection of another. With Li Yang's speed, the white-clad priest, whose strength was even weaker than Tian Gang's, had absolutely no time to escape.

Peng!

With a clean and efficient kick, the white-clad priest's chest immediately caved in strangely.

'Tian Gang, how are you? Don't tell me that you died, right?!" Li Yang

looked at the foolish Tian Gang, and was slightly making fun of him as he spoke.

Tian Gang stared blankly. For Li Yang to kill those two, it all happened in a breath's time. Tian Gang still felt as if it wasn't quite real, as it was obvious that he was just about to die, but instead, the enemy died. His hesitation within life and death made him receive a direct attack just now.

"Tian Gang, you still don't have a villa yet, so these two sister and brother werewolves should just live at my place!" Li Yang looked at the woman and youngster that Tian Gang was protecting, and immediately saw that these two had Chinese bloodlines. However, he noticed that these two siblings were both werewolves, only that the sister had already awoken, and the younger brother hadn't awoken yet.

"Thank you. Currently, my strength is still not sufficient to protect them, and it would be better to have them under your wing. In fact... I only met them for thirty minutes!" Tian Gang's words were a bit shocking.

Li Yang could not help but be startled. He saw that Tian Gang was doing his utmost to help these siblings, and thought that the girl had some kind of deep relationship with Tian Gang! Only for that reason did he allow the two to live at his place, after all, he still had a favorable impression of Tian Gang. However, after seeing that the siblings were both Chinese, Li Yang wouldn't just do nothing either.

"You two should just live at my place for now then. At my place, the Church's people won't be able to find you guys!" Li Yang smiled as he spoke.

The siblings looked at Li Yang, and they couldn't help but repeatedly bow their heads as they continuously said, "Thank you!"

...

After seeing that the two were at ease after settling down, Tian Gang received a bit of treatment under Li Yang's Xiantian qi. He was about to leave, and Li Yang also stood up as he saw him off.

Villa entrance.

"Right, you only knew them for thirty minutes, yet you tried so hard for them?" After seeing that the previously cold Tian Gang suddenly do something like this, Li Yang couldn't help but feel a bit curious.

Tian Gang's face flashed with a blushing red, and then returned to his usual unfeeling expression after. Tian Gang looked towards Li Yang, and bluntly said, "Am I not allowed to fall in love at first sight?"

When Li Yang heard this, he couldn't help but be stunned as his mouth widened. Love at first sight? The cold and arrogant Tian Gang could fall in love at first sight?

"Mu Yi, you can't chase after her!" Tian Gang spoke with a strong tone, and after saying that, he left. As Li Yang looked at Tian Gang's disappearing figure, his eyes blinked a few times. "Me chasing her? This..."

Just when Li Yang thought that it was extremely hilarious, suddenly Li Yang's expression changed, and he muttered, "Tonight really was quite unusual. Cow ghosts and snake deities have appeared!" (PR note: This is an idiom meaning something like all the monsters really came out tonight) Li Yang's figure flashed, as if he was simply tobacco smoke, he left the villa and entered the heavy night.

Book 2 Chapter 8 Pt. 2 – A Nice Surprise

Li Yang stood upon the peak of a villa, and immediately activated the Breath Restraint Technique as his eyes gazed towards the small alley way where the fight had just taken place.

"Great Marquis, the people who passed away here are members of the Church! A white clothed priest and a special Deacon!" A man in a black suit respectfully spoke to the black-clad man next to him.

When the Great Marquis heard this, he muttered to himself for a bit before saying, "The special Deacon is a fifth-rank expert, and the white clothed priest is a third rank. However, the special Deacon seemed to have had been beheaded without the slightest bit of resistance, so it seems that the opponent must be sixth rank. However, I am familiar with all the experts between the werewolves and our Blood Clan in New York, yet why haven't I detected any of their scents? Who was exactly that saved the two young werewolves?"

"Richard, you dare kill two of my Church's men, heng, then you should suffer righteous justice!" Following a grim voice, a ray of dazzling white radiance shot towards the Great Marquis.

The Great Marquis moved his body, and immediately, there was only an afterimage. He instantly avoided the white ray of light.

The Great Marquis saw a blonde male walk out from within the alley depths, and his expression immediately changed. "Robert, the golden holy warrior!" Great Marquis Richard could not have possibly known that the number one expert from the Church would show up here. Golden holy warriors were all seventh rank experts, and as a vampire Marquis, he was barely a sixth rank expert. There was an entire rank between them, moreover, as Robert was in possession of the golden battle armor, his attack power was even stronger than an average seventh rank expert by quite a bit.

"Go!" The Great Marquis shouted, and the vampire Earl immediately ran into the distance.

Robert coldly snorted. Although vampires weren't that powerful, their speeds could still look down upon the underground world in disdain. As for the vampires escaping, he really did feel rather powerless.

"Holy Lance of Light!" Robert threw out the dazzling white lance, and like a ray of lightning, it shot out. Its target — the running vampire Earl.

That vampire Earl also noticed the incoming attack, and immediately shouted out. His body instantly transformed into a giant bat, and the bat had glowing silver wings. The bat's speed was extremely quick, and immediately dodged the attack. It flew into the night sky, and disappeared soon after.

"Robert, I wish you sweet dreams tonight!" Great Marquis Richard bowed like a gentleman, and shortly after, his body transformed into a bat. The bat alternated between silver and gold, and his speed was even greater than the vampire Earl who previously also transformed into a bat. Like a flash of lightning, he instantly vanished.

"Vile and repulsive bat, only knowing how to run!" Robert was a bit angry. If a vampire did not want to fight and immediately ran, he really had no way of catching them.

...

Due to his Breath Restraint Technique, the two parties from Blood Clan and the Church did not notice Li Yang who was currently atop a villa.

"There really are quite a few experts within Manhattan, and my current fifth-rank expert strength really does not account for much. I still need to work hard and cultivate!" Li Yang, who was observing everything the whole time, shook his head and sighed before leaving.

Within Li Yang's villa.

Upon walking into the villa, Li Yang immediately heard the sound of whimpering. Li Yang couldn't help but walk toward the sound out of curiosity. That whimpering sound came precisely from the room the pair of siblings stayed within.

"Sis, mother died, what do we do from now on? Find father? Wuwu..." The voice came from that youth.

"It's all older sister's fault. If older sister turned into a werewolf to kill that bastard, then we wouldn't have been chased after, and mom wouldn't have died!" While speaking, that older sister also began to weep.

"Sis, how could it be blamed on you? You just awakened, and it was only because of that villa owner trying to force you did you transform, and you couldn't help it either. The most detestable are those from the Church. Did we do something wrong? Upon discovering our scent, they immediately chased after us with killing intent!" The youth gnashed his teeth in anger, and he seemed extremely angry.

Li Yang who stood outside gained a rough understanding of the issue. This girl must have worked part-time for a villa owner, and later when the owner wanted to rape her, she involuntarily transformed and killed him. This incurred the attention of the Church, and their mother most likely passed away while in the process of protecting them.

"Overlord, do you have any werewolf cultivation secrets from the devil realm? Give me one of them." Li Yang said to Overlord Xiang Yu.

Overlord Xiang Yu said, "Werewolves are indeed a race from the Devil realm, and I am quite clear as to which cultivation paths they are most suited for. It's not a big deal, Overlord will just tell you what it is. This cultivation method is known as the 'Wolf Emperor Art', and when cultivated to the peak, one can reach the Ascension stage. Following that, upon surviving the Tribulation stage, they could turn into a demon, and could cultivate a few of the devil realm's more profound methods. Now, Overlord will pass onto you the 'Wolf Emperor Art'!"

Soon after, a set of cultivation methods appeared within Li Yang's mind, and this cultivation method was completely different from the one used by humans. Werewolves could only reconstruct their meridians after passing through the Tribulation Stage, and then begin their cultivation of a few Devil Realm's profound methods. After all, the few Devil Realm miraculous methods within the Devil Realm were all prepared for Humans.

"This cultivation method is indeed amazing. It completely cultivates the physical body, and when one reaches the peak, and obtains the Wolf Emperor realm, one has no need to fear even the Ascension stage. Formidable, indeed formidable!" Li Yang couldn't help but sigh.

Overlord Xiang Yu muttered within Li Yang's mind, "Heng heng, this 'Wolf Emperor Art' is merely a low grade cultivation method. When cultivated to the peak, one can only reach the tribulation stage. When Overlord's method is cultivated to the peak, one can reach the Devil Emperor stage, and only that could be considered truly powerful."

...

Early in the morning the next day, Li Yang was surprised to find that breakfast as well as other matters had already been taken care of. In addition, the sibling were standing on the side.

"This is a cultivation method for you two. Right, you absolutely must not allow this to leak outside!" Li Yang place two sheets of paper on the table, and began to eat his breakfast. "Remember, the only reason I am giving you guys this cultivation method is because you also have Chinese blood inside of you. After memorizing it, just destroy it!"

The sibling carefully looked over the cultivation method, and soon after, the two immediately became shocked.

This was completely prepared for werewolves, and after cultivating this, one could reach the legendary Wolf Emperor stage. With this method, they had hope for revenge. Previously, they were in despair, and even wanted to return to China to search for a father they had never met before. Now they had the chance to take revenge, they obviously would not leave. Moreover, by returning to China, the chances of them finding their father was simply too low. They only had a matching pair of jade.

'Thank you sir! Thank you sir!' The pair of siblings excitedly spoke. With this method, they had hope of getting revenge, and the pair of siblings' goals became clear.

"You two don't need to worry about me chasing you out. Don't hesitate to stay here, and just focus on cultivating. If your strength is not sufficient, you absolutely must not look for those Church people!" After Li Yang finished eating, he spoke a bit before leaving.

...

Deep into the night.

Waves of cyan colored streams of energy circulated around Li Yang's body, and the Xiantian qi within Li Yang's body began to make large wave like motions. He continuously absorbed the worldly spiritual essence, absorbing it into his Dantian and refining it into Xiantian internal qi. The 'nebula' created from liquefied Xiantian qi also began to gradually

increase in size.

Hong!

The Xiantian qi within his body all shot towards his Dantian, and the 'nebula' within Li Yang's immediately increased by three times. However, in that split second, it once again shrunk by three times, and just like this, it expanded and contracted. While expanding and contracting, countless amounts of Xiantian qi was being absorbed, yet the nebula seemed to not have changed at all. The only notable difference was that the nebula seemed to be spinning a bit faster.

It expanded and condensed over a hundred times, and the Xiantian qi was completely absorbed. After a long time, waves of even clearer Xiantian qi flowed out Li Yang's 'nebula', and flowed towards the rest of his body.

Li Yang finally reached the Xiantian Paragon stage, and his internal energy reached the fifth rank.

"Li Yang, Overlord had previously said that once you reached the Paragon stage and reach the fifth rank stage, Overlord will give you a pleasant surprise. Overlord is one who keeps his words, so the promise will now be fulfilled!"

Book 2 Chapter 9 Pt. 1 – Devil God's Six Vanishment

Li Yang was still immersing himself within the wonderful realm of Xiantian qi circulation. Upon reaching the Paragon stage of his cultivation, the stream of Xiantian qi began to steadily flow, and he could now even form the Big Dipper qi protection. To have it continuously flow, that feeling was absolutely splendid, so how could the current Li Yang not be happy? When he heard Xiang Yu's voice within his mind, Li Yang couldn't help but be startled, and he immediately felt excited.

"Overlord, what kind of nice surprise is this? I believe that Overlord's actions would definitely make a mortal like me wild with joy!" Li Yang seldomly used such flattery.

Overlord Xiang Yu also calmly received it, and his decision to give Li Yang this 'pleasant surprise' was also done after careful consideration. After all, his sovereign — Devil realm's Sovereign Chi You, once ordered that this 'Demon God's Six Vanishment' not be leaked to outsiders.

"I am passing this onto a fellow brother, this can't be considered leaking to outsiders right?!" Overlord Xiang Yu persuaded himself. However, he was not worried about Sovereign Chi You's punishment, after all, although this 'Demon God's Six Vanishment' was important, it was not something that one could comprehend just because they wanted to. In addition, all three of the sovereigns had access to this 'Demon God's Six Vanishment', and the most important part was Overlord Xiang Yu's identity — he was Sovereign Chi You's beloved disciple.

"Li Yang, do you know what type of methods are most important within the Immortal and Devil realms?" Overlord Xiang Yu suddenly asked.

When Li Yang heard this, he thought for a while before replying. "It should be cultivation methods right? After all, cultivating oneself is the foundation!"

After Overlord Xiang Yu heard this, he couldn't help but loudly laugh. "Haha... what you said cannot be considered wrong either. Cultivation methods are indeed important, and for those insignificant members of the immortal and devil realm, those sects without true masters, having a cultivation method is indeed extremely important. However, as for the Immortal Emperor and Devil Emperor, attack techniques are what's truly the most important!"

"Techniques?" Li Yang was amazed.

"Right, techniques. It is the technique that decides who is stronger between two experts who are at the same power!" Xiang Yu resolutely said.

Li Yang began to understand a bit.

"For example, the mortal realm's Flying Dagger. Previously, you were barely a second rank expert, yet by depending on the 'Xiao Li Flying Dagger' skill, you were able to kill a fourth rank ninja. Your Flying Dagger attack can also barely be considered a low grade technique," explained Overlord Xiang Yu.

Li Yang understood, however, he felt rather unsatisfied that Xiang Yu called his Flying Dagger technique a low grade technique.

"Don't get angry yet, the Flying Dagger can be considered an attack technique within the mortal world, but within the devil realm, it can only be considered a special weapon, and cannot even be considered an attack technique! The true attack techniques are those that don't rely on any weapons, and simply rely on oneself. One can use it to increase the attack output by ten, or even a hundred times!" Overlord Xiang Yu proudly said.

Li Yang suddenly felt his heart tremble. "To increase the same attack that would be stronger than an ordinary person's by ten, to even a hundred times?" If these types of things really existed, then it was definitely a skill that could be used to kill someone at the same level. As for supreme experts like the immortal or devil emperors where their attack powers most likely already reached the peak, this type of attacking technique was the most important.

As for people whose attack power was lower, this type of attack technique was also the most important.

"Right now, Overlord will pass on to you our devil realm's supreme attack technique sacred text — the Devil God's Six Vanishment." Overlord Xiang Yu's voice seemed to be a bit divine.

When Li Yang heard this, he immediately felt that his heart was jumping with putong putong sounds. This was the devil realm's sacred text, their supreme attacking technique!

"Now, shut off your six senses. Just leaving a little bit of awareness through your Lingtai acupoint, and hand over everything else to me!"

Xiang Yu's words made Li Yang extremely shocked, as even when he used the B1 gene medicine, Overlord Xiang Yu did not immediately allow him to shut off his six senses.

"Heng heng, do you know exactly what this 'Devil God's Six Vanishment' really is? It's a form of imagery, and this image's movements have only been seen by our three great sovereigns. People outside of our devil realm basically have no qualifications to see this. The imagery within Overlord's mind was also transmitted to me back then by Sovereign Chi You. Overlord has also only seen this image, and the reason for the closing of your six senses is because this image possesses a great deal of power by itself. If your mind does not possess a certain degree of toughness, it is impossible for you to bear it. Although you have now realized the three great boundaries and your mind is already quite excellent, without Overlord's help, it would still be impossible for you to receive the imagery process!"

When Li Yang heard this, he was immediately overwhelmed with shock; even the image held power! Then how enormous was the power at the scene of the image?

Li Yang also did not try to act brave, and immediately closed off his six senses. His mind was completely silenced, and only left a bit of awareness within his Lingtai acupuncture point...

Suddenly, a wave of imposing and powerful aura overturned the sky and the earth within Li Yang's mind as it rose. It completely swept every region of Li Yang's mind, and not only was Li Yang completely shocked, he was firmly holding onto his weak awareness within the acupoint.

This ancient and imposing aura seemed to make Li Yang's mind tremble

continuously like an earthquake...

Li Yang held on, and currently, he didn't even have the time to be terrified as he continuously persisted on...

His soul seemed as if it had entered the underworld, and it was light and insignificant.

"Good brat, you actually managed to resist to this extent. Your mind will improve by at least a few times, as this Devil God's Six Vanishment's aura is indeed formidable. No wonder Sovereign Chi You never allowed me to see the actual scene, and only allowed me to see this image. After Li Yang undergoes this Devil God's Six Vanishment's image baptism, his current mind's cultivation is most likely now similar to that of an early ascension stage cultivator's." Xiang Yu's voice rang out within Li Yang's mind, however, the current Li Yang's soul was isolated within that small Lingtai acupoint, and actually could not hear Xiang Yu's words.

'Devil God's Six Vanishment' was a form of imagery, and was an image that came from the interior of the devil realm holy land. The devil realm holy land was a place that only the devil realm's three sovereigns could enter.

When the devil realm's sovereign Chi You looked at that holy land's scene, he wanted to directly record the original scene to slowly study. However, Sovereign Chi You found to his surprise that he couldn't record it.

In the end, Sovereign Chi You cultivated within the holy land for over tens of thousands of years, and finally gained what he had understood

from experience. Only after his cultivation was successful did he record down the scene based on his own comprehension. However, what was recorded was still a bit different from the actual original scene within the devil realm. To be precise, this was the scene that Sovereign Chi You comprehended!

After a long, long time...

"Li Yang, wake up!" A shout suddenly shook Li Yang awake.

Li Yang was suddenly woken up, and Li Yang's mind immediately returned, and the vast and borderless mind seemed like the starry sky. Therein flickered the bottomless radiance of the sacred text, and Li Yang's mind immediately rushed there.

A wave of antique and great scarceness that resembled an ancient aura immediately drowned Li Yang's mind. Fortunately, Li Yang's mind had already been refined once, and could already resist its boundless aura. Suddenly, within the sacred text, an earth-shattering scene appeared in front of Li Yang's mind...

Within the curling clouds and mist, a ray of golden colored radiance traveled back and forth within. The orbits were fantastic and profound like the stars of the universe, and were difficult to comprehend. Suddenly, golden-colored radiance transformed into a golden-winged Peng, and once again sped up. Like wind, like lightning, like mist...

This was precisely the Devil God's Six Vanishment's first Vanishment!

Book 2 Chapter 9 Pt. 2 – Devil God's Six Vanishment

Li Yang's mind instantly flew over and immersed itself into that profound and mysterious orbit. The scene of a golden-winged Peng traveling back and forth within the endless mist continuously appeared...

The Devil God's Six Vanishment's first vanishment — Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists! It was simply a set of body movements originating from the Devil Realm's holy land, as well as being the Devil Realm's most powerful set of body movements! When these movements were mastered to the peak, one's speed would reach a frightening level. While leaping, one could travel more than a hundred thousand li in a flash, and its deepness and profoundness far surpassed Li Yang's imagination. To Li Yang, it was as if university level math was suddenly placed in front of a primary student.

However, this was an image, and the scene that it continuously revealed made Li Yang's heart gradually gain insights. As if the fish within a brook were jumping, Li Yang also began to gain insights one after another within his heart.

The light body technique that he learned back in the Security Bureau 9th Division seemed like an old elderly lady was compared to a fit hundred meter sprinter. The disparity in speed was simply too great, and under Li Yang's insights, a new form of light body technique began to form.

He gained the insights little by little, and the light body technique transformed from its previous unbearably rubbish state (IET: of course

this unbearably rubbish description was only when compared to this Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists state) into a 'barely good' realm.

"Li Yang, not bad. The first layer of this 'Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists' was actually reached within ten days worth of time. However currently, your body could still only barely use this first layer's body movements. Your body's strength simply cannot resist the speed of the second layer yet." Xiang Yu's primordial spirit transformed into a person, and appeared in front of Li Yang.

Xiang Yu had an imposing appearance, and as he spoke, his domineering aura was extremely prominent.

"How many layers total does that 'Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists' have then?" Li Yang asked out of curiosity.

Xiang Yu smiled and said, "This Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists has a total of nine layers. The experts from my Devil Realm all focus on cultivating their bodies, and this is precisely for the sake of speed. Within a battle, speed is extremely important, as speed could attack an opponent before they could put up a defense. However, having extreme speed does not only bring this benefit, as extreme speed also brings a powerful attack! This attack is precisely that powerful attack!"

Li Yang nodded his head. Wasn't this simply $MV=FT$? According to modern formulas, once a Devil Realm expert's speed reached a frightening level and attack immediately after, the time frame for the attack will be short, and so the force behind that attack will reach a frightening value.

However, the force will act similarly in both directions, and only the Devil Realm expert who cultivates their bodies could use this type of advantage over other people's inferiority. As for the body's strength, the other realms really did not have anyone who would be comparable to a Devil Realm expert's.

This was even to the point where there were some immortals in the Immortal Realm who claimed that experts of the Devil Realm had indestructible bodies; what a joke! No matter what type of body one possessed, they still couldn't claim to have an indestructible body, as those were only relative terms. To an immortal expert, a Devil Realm expert's body was indeed an indestructible body, but within the Devil Realm, there would always be a mountain that was higher than you. As for what an immortal expert thought was an indestructible body, within a super Devil Realm expert's eyes, maybe a single fist would be enough to smash them apart!

Even the strongest bodies were obtained through gradual cultivation. Although Li Yang had already obtained roughly 10,000 crystals of energy, he still currently did not officially begin to cultivate. The 'Demonic Yang Law' was a top level Devil Realm cultivation method, and was already extremely perfect. Once one obtained the Golden Dan stage, they would be able to enter the way of the devil and begin cultivating their body. One could imagine what level Li Yang would reach once Li Yang truly began to cultivate the body.

"Li Yang, you have already reached the Xiantian Paragon stage, and your Xiantian qi is already flowing steadily. To abstain from eating for a year or two is no longer a big deal, so you should peacefully cultivate those sets of imagery!" Xiang Yu said.

Li Yang was suddenly stunned. "Didn't you say the 'Devil God's Six

Vanishment'? How could there only be three sets of imagery left?"

Xiang Yu embarrassingly spoke, "Haha, this was a miscalculation on Overlord's part. In the past, Sovereign Chi You once said that if one was unable to comprehend it, it would be impossible for it to be passed onto another! Overlord has only barely understood the fifth vanishment 'All Rivers Run into the Sea' and the sixth vanishment 'Splitting Apart the Heavens and the Earth'. My comprehension towards those are negligible, so only when I tried to pass it onto you did I realize that it was impossible for me to record it down. That's why only four vanishments were transmitted!"

Suddenly, Xiang Yu arrogantly said, "Don't worry, this 'Devil God's Six Vanishment' is incomparably deep and profound. Even Overlord who is at the later stages of cultivation could only comprehend four vanishments. For you, to use four vanishments within the human realm is already enough with room to spare. Even if you were in the Devil Realm, there aren't many people who could learn this 'Devil God's Six Vanishments'!"

Li Yang understood in his heart that this Xiang Yu was a top level Devil King rank expert within the Devil Realm. Although he wasn't sure exactly what level the 'Devil King' was, by looking at this name 'Devil King,' in addition to Xiang Yu being able to learn the sacred text — Demonic Yang Law, as well as learning the 'Devil God's Six Vanishment', this Xiang Yu was definitely an important figure. Currently, he was able to comprehend four of the vanishments, and it seemed that if Li Yang was also able to learn these four vanishments, he would be unobstructed within the human world. It would not be too late to learn the other two after he ascended to the Devil Realm.

Li Yang's feelings were moved.

The second scene appeared in front, and within it, the universe was only made of primordial chaos. Within the primordial chaos, a stream of energy was continuously spinning. It spun continuously, and the orbit of the rotation was extremely bizarre; however, it contained within it the truth between the heaven and earth. Gradually, the clump of energy stream divided into two streams of energy, and the two streams seemed as if they were mutually attracted to each other. They rotated about each other and became even more unusual, yet they still obeyed the natural laws. Everything was incomparably fantastic, and also contained some type of dark truth. The two streams of energy then slowly became four streams of energy...

'Devil God's Six Vanishments' Second vanishment — Sealed Off.

Seeing that endless rotation, Li Yang's mind also seemed to be attracted, and continuously circulated around him. They circulated again and again... After who knew how long, it felt like thousands and hundred years, yet it also felt like barely a moment passed.

Suddenly, happiness appeared within Li Yang's mind, and his heart was stirred. Suddenly, his spirit was assembled into that of an adult's. and his two hands began to imitate the rotations he had just gained insights into.

Stream after stream of energy gathered, took form within Li Yang's hands, and also began to rotate. However, this circulation lacked a certain variation when compared to the image. It lacked a bit of naturalness, and also lacked a bit of its imposing aura!

'This second vanishment 'Sealed Off' seems like a type technique, and at the same time seemed like a control technique. When trained to its peak, with a single wave of a hand, one can seal off an ocean as well as all of the living creatures within! To trap a person within was an incomparably easy task. You've bitterly trained for so long, and finally reached the first layer!' Xiang Yu arrogantly spoke.

However, Xiang Yu soon after embarrassingly said, "This 'Sealing Off' is another aspect where Overlord is rather inferior in. Back then when Sovereign Chi You transferred the image to me, there were ten streams that rotated about each other in an orbit!"

When Li Yang heard this, he smiled, and within his heart, he gloomily spoke, "That Sovereign Chi You was able to realize a realm with ten energy streams. Just what type of realm did the original scene within the Devil Realm's holy land reach?"

"Alright, you should first go out. During this period of time, that old fellow was about to crazy while searching for you. If it wasn't for Overlord using his restriction, that old fellow might have tore down your house! In addition, the last two vanishments aren't things that you could cultivate simply through isolating yourself!" When Xiang Yu said those words, Li Yang immediately became startled. This past cultivation session must have passed a hundred days, and that Old Jack must have gone crazy from searching for him. As for the other two werewolf siblings, they were most likely frantically training the 'Wolf Emperor Art'!

Book 2 Chapter 10 Pt. 1 – Splitting Rivers and Dividing the Ocean

When Li Yang came out of his training, it was already night time.

Hu!

A breeze blew past, and the previous empty and silent villa rooftop suddenly had a person standing on top.

Li Yang was covered in black, and unyieldingly stood atop the villa peak. As a light wind blew past, the corners of his clothes were making flapping sounds!

Fortunately, Li Yang was completely clad in black, and within the night, there weren't many people who would could see him. Li Yang's eyes were like the stars as he stood on the peak of the villa, and was overlooking the entire manhattan night sky. Manhattan was even busier at night than during the day, and countless people were strolling through the city.

He was watching over the countless pedestrians. There were young, old, ordinary, and rich people, and all different kinds of people passed within his gaze. While in a daze, Li Yang was feeling a type of illusion, as if he himself was a supreme god, and below his feet were countless individuals without power.

Suddenly, a sigh escaped Li Yang's mouth.

"Perhaps while these ignorant ordinary people are getting along, I

possess an inhuman amount of power. Nevertheless, the cruelties of the underground world are obvious, and this is absolutely a place where the powerful will reign supreme, and there is not a shred of emotion that gets in the way of this. Five great crime syndicates? Church? Darkness Assembly? These are all formidable top powers. If I did not cultivate in the Devil Realm secrets, I would simply be an insect in front of them. If they wanted to kill, then they would kill. If they wanted to pinch, then they would pinch. However, the current me has already begun training the Demonic Yang Law and the Devil God's Six Vanishments, making it a completely different situation!

"Heng, Holy Forest Group? I was wondering whether or not my bounty reward offer has caused you guys to make some adjustments to your lives?" On Li Yang's face was a faint smiling expression. With his interactions with Xiang Yu and his access to many of the Devil Realm's secrets, Li Yang was feeling more and more disdain towards the Mortal Realm. It was to the point where even when he was dealing with the Holy Forest Group, Li Yang still had a bit of a 'cat chasing mouse' type of feeling.

"Right, Overlord, do you have any soul tormenting secret methods?" Li Yang suddenly asked within his mind.

"I do, of course I do. My Devil Realm doesn't have many other things, but we have plenty of tormenting methods. Towards the Nascent Soul stage in particular, for example, the 'Hidden Ghost Devouring Spirit' combines the tormented soul with 999 other malicious spirits, and allow these malicious spirits to tear that soul into thousands of pieces. This will make that soul unable to ask for life or death! In the end, after countless year of torment, the soul's strength will weaken, and it will scatter away, never again able to reincarnate! Of course, you can also give the soul power, and allow it to live and endlessly suffer through pain and torture.

Whatever time you decide you want it to die, that is when it will die! Hehe, this is still one of the more simple ones. There is still the slightly more powerful 'White Flame Soul Smelting', and this 'White Flame Soul Smelting'...

When Li Yang heard this, he couldn't help but shiver. Heavens, this Devil Realm really is too formidable.

"The eighteen types that I spoke of just now were the ones that I use rather frequently. Within the Devil Realm, one needs to have some harsh techniques. If you aren't satisfied, there is no problem! My old friend Shi Hundan is a famous executioner, and his seventy two prosecution methods is something that even those who have a temperament as steady as Buddha cannot resist!"

"It seems like I have to learn some of these treacherous techniques. Lin Tianyu, it is because of you that I am learning these sinister techniques!" Li Yang softly laughed, and soon after, his body was like the wind, and instantly disappeared from the villa rooftop.

Early the next morning, the cute Old Jack once again made his routine visit towards Li Yang's apartment.

"What happened to Mu Yi? Why is he stubbornly staying within his house and refusing to come out? If it wasn't for him speaking that day, I really would have thought that he wasn't inside. However, that door is quite strange, and I have no way of entering through!" Old Jack was muttering as he walked. What he had heard was not Li Yang's voice, but rather what he experienced through the illusion created by Xiang Yu's restriction technique, making him feel as if it was Li Yang speaking.

"It really is a pity. It's been more than a hundred days already... How much participation fee has been wasted already... Mu Yi he unexpectedly did not come out even after a hundred days! Otherwise, my cute and hateful Mu Yi probably would have already entered the top division arena, and I, Old Jack, would have made at least a million dollars by now. Money... It really is large amounts of American dollars!" Old Jack cried aguishly. Old Jack did not have many things to do everyday, and making his way to Li Yang's villa each morning had already became his morning exercise activity.

"Hi, Little Jack, how are you!" Old Jack saw the youth within Li Yang's villa, and immediately spoke out with a smile.

This youth was indeed the younger brother of the werewolf siblings. The sister's name was Chen Li, and the brother's name was Chen Yu. The sister's american name was Lily, and the brother was called Jack. Old Jack was extremely fond of this Little Jack, and each time he came to Li Yang's house, being able to see Little Jack was also a great pleasure.

"Old Jack, hello to you as well!" Little Jack was still quite young. These past few days have been rather peaceful, and weren't as sorrowful as in the past.

"Little Jack, I'll bring you to Broadway this afternoon... Ah!" While Old Jack and Little Jack were talking, they noticed a person within the villa living room from the corner of their eyes. They couldn't help but be dumbstruck as they looked at the person who was eating breakfast... Li Yang.

"Oh! My dear Mu Yi, you finally came out! Did God finally open his eyes?" Old Jack blinked his eyes twice, and it seemed as if he was having trouble believing what was happening.

Old Jack suddenly pinched his own thigh, and after crying out in pain, he immediately jumped over. "Oh! Heavens, this is all real! Mu Yi, my dear Mu Yi, you finally left that repulsive room!" The light in Old Jack's eyes were shining, and that was a light that emerged when he thought about how much money was going to make.

Li Yang slightly laughed, and looked towards Old Jack as he spoke. "I truly must apologize, however, in the Underground Boxing Arena, as long as one fought ten matches within a year, it would be enough. Previously, I already fought over twenty matches, so there shouldn't be any problems right?" Prior to his closed training session, Li Yang had crazily accepted assassination mission and fought in the boxing arena. He completed roughly a dozen missions, and also fought in over twenty matches.

Old Jack hurriedly replied, "No, no, of course there aren't any problems. The only thing is that time is money. My dear Mu Yi, during this period of time, do you know how many matches you missed out on? Do you know how much money was lost? Otherwise, you would be able to enter the top division right now, and the participation fee itself would be several hundred thousand dollars!"

"Alright, Old Jack! Don't worry, you can go and peacefully arrange for matches now. I can participate in a match at any time!" Li Yang softly chucked as he spoke.

Old Jack's eyes immediately lit up, and immediately stood up with the intention of leaving. "Mu Yi, I am leaving first. Little Jack, let's go to

Broadway next time. Don't worry, I will definitely take you next time!" Old Jack currently wanted to arranged a large amount of matches for Li Yang, and he really could not wait any longer. After all, time was money.

After breakfast was finished.

"Little Jack, how is your cultivation of the 'Wolf Emperor Art' progressing?" Li Yang smiled as he spoke.

Little Jack was sitting on top of a couch in the living room, and wrinkled his nose. He proudly said, "I am a genius! In barely over a hundred days, I have already reached the second layer. Sister is still on the first layer!"

Seeing Little Jack so energetic now, Li Yang was also became happy. He also did not want a youngster to be so immersed in hatred. However, for Little Jack to be able to become relaxed again after such a short period of time, the first reason was because he was still young, and the second reason was because the person who killed their mother that day had already been killed by Li Yang.

Buzz...

The cell phone began to vibrate, and Li Yang immediately picked it up.

"Mu Yi, I have already arranged for your matches, tonight at eight!" Li Yang couldn't help but feel stupefied after hearing Old Jack's voice. How long had it been since Old Jack left?! It was barely the time it took to eat breakfast, and it seems that the power of money really was quite extraordinary.

Book 2 Chapter 10.2 – Splitting Rivers and Dividing the Ocean

“Old Jack, help me find a few servants. Otherwise, that barbarian bull Tian Gang will definitely get angry with me!” Li Yang looked at Lily who was busy in the kitchen, and immediately said this to Old Jack through his cell phone.

“Sure, no problem!” Old Jack immediately promised, as he had always wanted Li Yang to get a servant. However, Li Yang’s life has absolutely no routine. When he was by himself, he didn’t even know when he was going to eat. In actuality, once one reached the Xiantian realm, one could abstain from eating for ten to fifteen days. As a result, Li Yang not getting any servants was still normal, however now with Lily and Little Jack, he felt that it was not appropriate to let Lily be so busy.

Calling Tian Gang a barbarian bull was still not weird. He was almost two meters tall, and even outside of China he was considered a large man. In addition, his body weighed several hundred jin. He rarely spoke, and was incomparably callous; he was definitely a barbarian bull. After his interactions with him during this period of time, Li Yang noticed that Tian Gang separated gratitude and grudges quite distinctly, and this point was something that gave Li Yang a good impression.

“Mu Yi!” Tian Gang’s voice rang out from the front door, and he had already appeared in front of Li Yang. His two eyes were staring at Li Yang, and a faint killing intent was being emitted.

Li Yang was suddenly distracted, and looked at Tian Gang in confusion.

Tian Gang rarely spoke to others, and usually distinctly separated gratitude and grudges. Since he saved him last time, the relationship between the two of them should have improved a bit. However now, why did he look like he came to kill someone?

"Why didn't you hire any servants?" Tian Gang was mulling over the issue for quite a while before speaking.

Li Yang immediately understood, and it seems like Tian Gang really hated to be separated from Lily. "Haha, it seems like I still have some foresight. Just now, I already asked Old Jack to hire some servants! En, I should allow this brat Tian Gang to be a bit anxious!" Li Yang purposely turned around slowly and took out a notebook. He placed it on his thighs, and it was as if he didn't notice Tian Gang who was next to him.

"Mu Yi!" Tian Gang's voice suddenly softened by quite a bit. He had just seen Li Yang, and these past hundred days' feelings exploded, and that was why he was so furious. Just now, he remembered that Li Yang had saved his life, and so that was why he lowered his voice.

During these past hundred days, Tian Gang came to Li Yang's place almost everyday. Of course, it was on the premise that he was Li Yang's friend, but his goal was actually to get closer to Lily! However, although he told Li Yang that he liked Lily, to Lily, he couldn't say a single sentence. Whenever he saw Lily doing housework, he would always feel sorry for her, and wanted to hire a servant! However, Lily did not agree, and said that since it was Mu Yi's house, Tian Gang had no right to hire servants.

"Why haven't you hired any servants?" Li Yang seemed to have just heard Tian Gang's words, and he lifted his head to look at Tian Gang. He had a slight smile on his face as he said, "Then why haven't you hired

one?"

When Tian Gang heard this, he immediately became depressed. "Why haven't I hired any? Wasn't it because Lily said that it was your villa, and that I had no right to hire servants!!!" Tian Gang's words carried a large amount of resentment. However, his voice was rather soft, and was so soft that Chen Li within the villa couldn't even hear it.

TL: Reminder that Chen Li is Lily's chinese name

Li Yang understood, and began to laugh as he said, "Don't worry, I just asked Old Jack to hire some!" After Li Yang spoke, his eyes once again rested on the notebook on his lap, and on the laptop screen, he opened up the assassination organization's home page.

"Sorry! Just now, it was my bad!" After Tian Gang finished speaking, he did not wait for Li Yang's response and immediately walked towards the kitchen.

"Hehe, that barbaric bull knows how to apologize?" Li Yang was startled, and he immediately shook his head as he laughed. He opened up the 'billion dollar mission' page, and during these past hundred days, he haven't been able to go online. In the past, he would open up this page every day.

...

"Hopefully, no one else has completed it yet!" Li Yang's was looking forward to it in expectation inwardly. Upon opening the web page, Li

Yang immediately released a large sigh.

"Haha, this mission really is an abnormal mission after all. Among those S rank assassins, not a single one of them were able to succeed! Looks like I still have hope! It's a pity that I was training for these past hundred days; otherwise, I would have already became an A rank assassin!" Li Yang sighed.

Soon after, Li Yang carefully looked at the S rank assassins who had failed.

With no exceptions, those defeated S rank assassins were all killed off by that Wolf Emperor rank werewolf. Seventh rank experts were indeed extraordinary; however, the number of S rank assassins who picked up this mission were less than the amount of assassins who undertook this mission during the first month. Within these past hundred days, there were only three, and it seems that the S rank assassins have all been awoken now. Moreover, during the past month, there hasn't even been a single person who accepted this mission.

Suddenly, that billion dollar mission's web page lit up, and the colors changed. Li Yang immediately understood that another S rank assassin accepted this billion dollar mission.

Li Yang immediately looked at the records of the person who accepted this mission.

S rank assassin 'Third.'

The assassin realm was divided into the three great assassination organizations and a few solo assassins. Assassin 'Third' was the first assassin who was solo that accepted this mission. In the past, he accepted two S rank mission, and among them, one of the targets was even a sixth rank expert. However, assassin 'Third' still succeeded.

"Not good, this assassin is indeed powerful. To unexpectedly even having defeated a sixth rank assassin, what kind of level has he reached? Was it possible that he was going to succeed against a seventh rank assassin?" Li Yang felt a sudden movement within his heart. Towards this assassin 'Third', he was starting to feel a bit of worry. This was a billion dollar mission!

"He is definitely more powerful than you, Li Yang! To want to kill a sixth rank expert, your current strength is still not enough!" Xiang Yu's words immediately made Li Yang stare blankly.

"Is there really no hope? I have reached the fifth rank in both my physical body and my internal qi, and also possess the Flying Dagger and the 'Devil God's Six Vanishment'!" Li Yang felt that this was a bit difficult to accept. After all, although his level was weak in the past, he was still able to break through the level limitations by relying on the Flying Dagger.

Xiang Yu thus continued. "Heng heng, a sixth rank expert is equivalent to a Golden Dan stage expert. The energy within their bodies will undergo a transformation, and so the difference between a sixth rank expert and a fifth rank expert is incredibly large. If you mounted a sneak attack without the enemy detecting you, then there might still be a chance. If it was a straight up fight, then you wouldn't have the slightest bit of hope! The defenses formed from true primordial qi by an expert at the Golden Dan stage is not something that you can break through!"

Unless your Flying Dagger was a Law Artifact!"

"Then what about the Devil God's Six Vanishment?" Li Yang asked in an unresigned manner.

Xiang Yu proudly spoke. "Heng, Overlord has told you before that the Flying Dagger could only be considered a weapon that is slightly special, and could not be considered at the same level as the secret method 'Devil God's Six Vanishment.' As the Devil Realm's top level technique, this secret method is of course effective! The Devil God's Six Vanishment can allow an attack to increase its power by ten times, or even a hundred times!"

"Then... Why can't I defeat a sixth rank expert by using the Devil God's Six Vanishment?" Li Yang could not understand. He was a fifth rank expert, but together with the ten times boost, it should be about right to defeat a sixth rank expert.

"Haha... That is because Li Yang you have just learned the 'Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists' and 'Sealed Off.' One of these is a movement technique, and the other is for defense. There isn't a single one that can attack, so how could you increase your attack power?" Xiang Yu's words made Li Yang absolutely stunned.

That's right. Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists and Sealed Off both weren't offensive methods, so how was he going to improve his attack power?

"Could it be that I have no other methods? Right, aren't there still the other two vanishments?" Li Yang suddenly remembered that he still had

two other methods!

Xiang Yu immediately laughed and said, "Smart. Devil God's Six Vanishment has a movement method, a defensive method, and the other four are all for attack! Among them, 'All Rivers Run into the Sea' and 'Splitting the Heavens and the Earth' Overlord does not have the smallest achievement in. However, the other two 'Splitting Rivers and Dividing the Ocean' and 'Breaking Mountains and Splitting Skies', Overlord is somewhat accomplished in. As long as you learn a single one of these, then you would definitely be able to defeat a sixth rank expert!"

Book 2 Chapter 11.1 – Snow Werewolf

"There is a large river flowing within this city, and not only is it broad, it is also extremely deep. Cultivating the 'Splitting Rivers and Dividing the Ocean' within it will reveal excellent results. You can enter it through the Escape Technique, and then cultivate at the river's base!" Xiang Yu smiled as he spoke.

Li Yang was looked distracted for a moment. New York? Large river?

Wasn't that the Hudson River?

Manhattan was merely a small island, and there was an astonishing amount of water within New York. New York was located precisely at the mouth of the Hudson River, and the wide Hudson River surpassed a hundred zhang in width. In addition, the Hudson River was adjacent to the Atlantic Ocean, and as a result, one could imagine just how deep it was.

Cultivate at the base of the Hudson River! This really was an idea straight out of a fantasy. To cultivate at the bottom of the river, it made Li Yang feel a childish playfulness within his heart.

"En, after tonight's match, I'll try cultivating at the base of the river!" Li Yang's face had a rare relaxed expression.

...

Eight at night, under Central park — Underground Boxing Arena.

Tonight's Underground Boxing Arena number 1 was filled to the capacity with people. The rich individuals, their spouses, and even many of the aristocrats from Europe all gathered at this Underground Boxing Arena number 1. Typically, arena number 1 hosted more important events. It was usually held the fights of the top division!

However today, the number 1 arena was actually holding a high division fight, and the amount of spectators were actually a lot higher than normal.

That was because this was 'Mu' who came from China's first fight after a hundred days.

'Mu' was a star within the Underground Boxing Arena. With a single Rear Revolving Kick, he sent the 'lunatic' Shaq flying from the stage, dying on the spot! Soon after, 'Mu' began to frantically fight, and fought one battle after another. It seemed like he fought a match every three or four days, and the amount of fights he went through was absolutely astonishing. This made those who loved the Underground Boxing Arena to simply be too excited. That period of time was crazy, and was a period of time that was engrossed in darkness and blood.

Following that, after fighting more than twenty rounds, 'Mu', whose reputation even surpassed a few of the top division experts suddenly stopped participating in matches. These rich and powerful individuals had no choice either, after all, one only had to participate in ten matches a year. Even the Underground Boxing Arena had no authority to threaten or coerce them.

However, today, 'Mu' once again appeared.

"Ladies and gentleman! Tonight is a beautiful and exciteful night. Today, 'Mu', who has left the arena for over a hundred days has returned. Those bloodthirsty and crazy days have returned, go crazy, gentlemen! Cry out, ladies! Let's use our crazy shouts to welcome our 'Mu'! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu!" The judge on top of the arena crazily shouted, and the spectators below began to hysterically cry out...

Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu!...

Within the cheering noises, a black clad Li Yang walked onto the stage. He had dark hair, dark clothes, dark expression, and a dark aura. At the same time, he gave the the spectators below who had waited for more than a hundred days a dark madness. Li Yang's whole body involuntarily emitted an ice cold aura, and this cold and detached aura made the spectators below grow even crazier.

This was their 'Mu' — Cold, unfeeling, and murderous!

"Ladies and gentlemen, Mu's opponent is this fighter below. A genius from the Siberian training camp, recognized as the number one genius within fifty years — 'Ripper' Carter! 'Ripper' Carter entered the competition while 'Mu' was on his hiatus, and I believe that everyone is familiar with his bloodthirstiness. During these hundred days, 'Ripper' Carter allowed us to know what truly is madness. He brought with him a bloody storm to the underground boxing arena. In barely a hundred days, he fought over twenty five matches, averaging four days between each fight. His record stands as 25 wins, and all of his opponents were

completely torn into pieces by him. Today, could he rip apart our 'Mu'?"

A large white man whose gaze stared at Li Yang with an eagle like radiance. His muscles that were as solid as rocks, allowed everyone to feel how terrifying he was. The strength in his two arms were powerful, and could easily tear apart a boxer into pieces.

"Who is powerful and who is weak? All of this will be revealed soon!" The judge loudly and excitedly announced.

Suddenly, a male who was entirely dressed in black walked onto the stage, and when that judge saw him, he immediately handed the microphone over.

"Ladies and gentleman, the strength of today's fighters should be clear to everyone. From their past twenty fights, everyone can see that these two's strength have both already reached that of the top ten supreme boxers' level. That is why the Underground Boxing Arena have decided that these two boxers' appearance fees will both be raised to a million dollars. This can also be considered as the Underground Boxing Arena's support towards these two fighters! In addition, tonight's gambling regarding this fight will be raised from fifty million to one billion dollars! I welcome everyone to once again increase their bets!" That black colored male finished speaking, and bowed towards those below the arena.

Immediately, the rich and powerful people below all began to howl one after another as they increased their bids.

'Mu' was profound and mysterious. No matter who the opponent was,

he would similarly kick them to death with a single foot!

'Ripper' Carter was incomparably valiant, and no matter who the fighter was, they would all be torn up one after another without exception!

These two individual's win rate were all a hundred percent, and these two individual's victories were all won in the blink of an eye. One was callous, while the other was bloodthirsty!

All of the rich people chose the fighter they liked, and all of a sudden, they increased their bets. 'Mu' and 'Ripper' were both rarely seen super experts, and the amount of supporters they had differed by only a small amount!

"In the past, I completed over ten assassination missions. In total, I earned a total of roughly twenty million dollars. The appearance fee is merely two million for the high level division, but even though I placed all the bids on myself, my payout is still too low. I earned roughly ten million, and so in total, I have about forty million now. Fortunately, my payout is actually exactly the same as this 'Ripper' Carter, and we are both 1:1.5, and I believe that after this round, I would be able to earn twenty million!"

While Li Yang stood on the arena, his mind was thinking about his own bets. Towards the 'Ripper' in front of him, Li Yang did not care about in the slightest.

That sharp and clear bell suddenly sounded out; the round was starting!!!!

That 'Ripper' Carter's eagle-like eyes suddenly violently opened. His feet moved, and his body appeared in front of Li Yang. Li Yang's body swiftly moved back several steps backwards.

"My God!" Li Yang looked at 'Ripper' Carter, and he was immediately startled. Just now, the opponent's speed was fast to the point where even Li Yang almost didn't react. If it wasn't for him cultivating the 'Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists,' Li Yang might have had to collide head on with his opponent.

"Li Yang, be careful. He is a fifth rank expert, and in addition he is a beastman. However, I'm guessing that he isn't a werewolf!" Xiang Yu's voice rang out within Li Yang's mind.

Li Yang's mind trembled. "Ah, not a werewolf? It's a snow werewolf, a Siberian snow werewolf! A snow werewolf was even more terrifying than a normal werewolf!"

Book 2 Chapter 11.2 – Snow Werewolf

Snow werewolves are a type of Siberian beastman. On Earth, the only types of beastman that were recognized were the werewolves and snow werewolves. The snow werewolf's fighting strength was a bit stronger than that of a regular werewolf. However, the number of snow werewolves in existence were much lower, and there were less of them than a tenth of the number of ordinary werewolves within criminal societies.

The Russian special forces division 'Blood' found quite a few snow

werewolves who had yet to rouse their hidden powers within the scope of their country. They used a few special methods to allow these snow werewolves to awaken and train, becoming their country's effective experts. The special division 'Blood' was equivalent to the Security Bureau 9th and 11th division.

There was also 'Exterminators,' one of the three great assassin organizations. This 'Exterminators' organization's core power also consisted of these snow werewolves.

These two great organizations added together occupied ninety percent of the snow werewolves. The rest of them were scattered about in various locations.

"The snow werewolves' most powerful features are their sharp claws. No wonder this fellow liked to tear his opponents into shreds." Li Yang stood near the corner of the arena. A slight smile appeared on his lips. "After being in this Underground Boxing Arena for so long, I finally met a respectable opponent. Alright, I'll have a showdown with you then!"

'Ripper' Carter was also inwardly shocked. "This fellow actually dodged my attack just now. It seems like his speed is not any less than mine, however, how could a human be so fast? Could it be that this fellow is part of the Blood Clan?" Carter looked at Li Yang who was completely dressed in black. He nodded his head inwardly; the Blood Clan did indeed like the color black.

"Heng heng, who gives a fuck whether you are part of the Blood Clan or

not. Even if you are, your only strength is you speed. Your strength is definitely not equivalent to mine!" A light flashed in Carter's eyes, and his feet moved. The energy from his powerful muscles instantly exploded. In that instance, his speed reached a terrifying level. Carter shifted instantly within the small arena.

Inclined kick!

Hu! A strong gale shot out, and Carter's waist thick right leg was like a guillotine as it horizontally swept towards Li Yang's head region. Carter stuck out his tongue in a bloodthirsty manner.

Li Yang's eyes slightly narrowed his eyes, and then suddenly widened them. A strand of ice cold killing intent flowed out. Li Yang used all of his strength! His right leg became like a sharp sword in that instant, and with a hu sound, after images appeared in the air. In that instant, Li Yang's right leg horizontally smashed into the incoming 'Ripper' Carter's right leg.

Peng!

The sound of the collision reverberated throughout the entire stadium. However, everyone looked at Li Yang in shock, because only now did the after images left behind by Li Yang's right leg slowly disappear. Meanwhile, Li Yang's original body was like floating cotton as he used the force from the collision to float down to the other side of the stadium.

"His speed is actually faster than mine, but his strength is a bit less than mine! This vampire must be at the Earl rank." 'Ripper' Carter stood there without moving. He looked at Li Yang who retreated to the other side and

made this decision in his mind.

"Abnormal. The physical power of a werewolf is abnormal. This fellow is just as unusual. The strength of my physical body is already almost 200,000 crystals, yet I failed to defeat him through this force, instead losing an exchange!" Li Yang's brows slightly furrowed.

Carter! Carter! Carter! Carter! Carter!...

After seeing that 'Carter' was currently on top, the spectators who were supporting Carter all began to cheer. Meanwhile, Li Yang's supporters also began to shout and yell.

Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu!...

In that split second, the stadium's atmosphere erupted. 'Ripper' Carter became excited, sending off light from his eyes; he loved being cheered on by the crowd! Meanwhile, Li Yang stood quietly and undisturbed, as if he was like ten-thousand year old black ice as he stood on the side.

"Go die!"

Following a howl, 'Ripper' Carter finally used up his supreme skill 'Snow Werewolf's Splitting Claw'! In that instant, only the countless images of claws could be seen rising high into the air, all of them rushing towards Li Yang.

The Underground Boxing Arena's athletes mainly used their legs, yet this 'Ripper' Carter was a rarely seen individual who use his hands.

However, there were no limitations within the Underground Boxing Arena. As long as it allowed the rich and powerful and their dames go crazy, it was good.

'Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists'

Li Yang's body immediately appeared to be like lightning, instantly flashing out from within the air-tight rain of claws. His right leg suddenly exploded towards that 'Ripper' Carter's chest.

Chinese martial skill — Heart Penetration Kick!

Waves of Xiantian qi assembled towards Li Yang's feet, and both the strength of his physical body and his Xiantian qi simultaneously erupted!

However, 'Ripper' Carter was worthy of being called snow werewolf. Although Li Yang's speed was astonishingly fast, Carter still noticed. However, it was already too late for Carter to defend himself, and could only move slightly to avoid a fatal blow.

Hong!

Seeing his bleeding abdomen, 'Ripper' Carter's beast race madness finally ignited. Hou~~~ Carter howled towards the sky, and all of the dark energy within the stadium rushed towards 'Ripper' Carter. He had already went crazy, transforming himself. If he didn't transform, his only conclusion would be death!

"Fuck! He was so powerful without transforming, what about after

transforming?!!! His strength should increase by at least several folds. Even if he didn't reach that of a sixth rank expert, it should still be at the peak of the fifth rank. Currently, the strength of my physical body and internal combined together only totals to about 40,000 crystals! I absolutely cannot allow him to transform!" Li Yang widened his eyes, and his kick that mixed China's leg technique with the death leg technique finally erupted.

Death leg technique — Chain Sweeping Kick!

Li Yang's two legs were like lever-style guillotines, brandishing into a whirlwind. They chopped down towards Carter like a wheel, his Xiantian qi accumulated within his thighs. The force was powerful, and the current Carter definitely could not bear it.

The current Carter who was in the process of transforming had a much slower reaction time.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!...

Carter was like a meat sandbag, being smashed by Li Yang's two legs until his entire body flowed with fresh blood. Fortunately, a snow werewolf' vitality was exuberant. Moreover, he had already somewhat transformed, and while absorbing the dark energy, the bruises on his body was quickly recovering at a visible speed.

Chinese martial skill — Heavy Five Chained Kicks!

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

The explosive sound penetrated through the entire stadium. The Heavy Five Chained Kicks struck out, each kick stronger than the last, each kick more fierce than the last!

Pu!

'Ripper' Carter sprayed blood towards the sky. There was a shocking empty cavity in his chest, and it was precisely blasted apart forcibly by Li Yang's Heavy Five Chained Kicks. He madly tried to absorb the dark energy to recover, but the amount of dark energy being absorbed was far from being sufficient. Without the dark energy, Carter's transformation also stopped.

Li Yang revealed a fierce expression on his face.

Death leg technique — High Pressure Splitting Leg!

Li Yang's right leg firmly smashed into the immobile Carter's head region. Carter's cervical vertebra snapped with a loud and clear sound, and his body was immediately about to powerlessly drop. His cervical vertebra was snapped, and his windpipe was fractured; he died on the spot.

Death Leg Technique — Reverse Rotating Kick!

It was the same move he used during the very first fight. Li Yang's left leg was like a whirlwind, rotating an entire a hundred and eighty degrees and bringing with it a high pressure stream of qi. It forcibly sent the

already dead Carter out of the arena with a kick. Blood continuously spilt out in midair.

Silence!

The entire stadium was silent!

A long time later, noise like thunder rose!!!

Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu!...

Li Yang's supporters all began to howl, madly roaring and yelling. There were also many rich and powerful who were cursing, cursing that Carter made the money they gambled disappear like water...

Li Yang did not care at all about the shouts of the judge and people below. He seemed extremely calm and undisturbed as he left the boxing arena alone.

"This fight was not bad. I earned twenty million dollars!" Li Yang revealed a slight smile as he walked down from the boxing arena. He immediately thought of the 'Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists' he cultivated, saying inwardly, "En, the match ended. It's about time. After a bit, I will go to the bottom of the Hudson River to begin my training!"

Book 2 Chapter 12.1 – Natural Laws of the Great Primal Chaos

Tian Gang, who stood below the arena looked directly at Li Yang. A while later, only when Li Yang walked to where he was did he release a breath before saying, "Mu Yi, previously, I thought that I could catch up to you by earnestly training. But... Looking now, the gap between us is just too great! Too great!"

Li Yang was distracted for a moment. Shortly after, he revealed a forced smile. This time, to defeat the snow werewolf 'Ripper' Carter, it could be said that he used all of his strength. Although Tian Gang, or any other top division expert for example, had roughly a thousand crystals in energy, these people could not have possibly seen through his and Carter's true strength. However, at the very least, they could at the very least see the enormous disparity between Li Yang and themselves.

"Tian Gang, you..." Li Yang wanted to console Tian Gang a bit.

Tian Gang once again began to surge with fighting spirit. The radiance in his eyes flickered as he looked at Li Yang as he firmly said, "There will be a day, a day when I will overtake you. I won't give up the chance to challenge you!" After speaking, Tian Gang turned around and left.

"There will be a day when you will surpass me?" Li Yang couldn't help but feel rather helpless. "Sigh, with Overlord's help, in addition to using the Essence Cleansing Dan, we never stood on the same starting line to begin with. To challenge me, that's completely unfair ah!" However, Li Yang also understood Tian Gang's tough character. After he made his decision, it was difficult to persuade him otherwise.

"Mu Yi, the money has already been deposited into your card. When will your next fight be? You would do something like hiding in your room for another hundred days to this pitiful old man right?" Old Jack blinked his two eyes pitifully as he looked at Li Yang.

Li Yang laughed softly and said, "Relax, Old Jack. Continue arranging fights, however, it's best if you make them four or five days in between. This frequency works the best for me!"

Old Jack's eyes lit up, and he immediately repeatedly said, "Okay! If you say four or five days, then four or five days it is. You've requested me to hire some servants, so I hired some. There are three filipino maids, none of them older than thirty. In addition, these three are quite good at what they do. They are also rather proficient on the etiquette of the upper class, and are the maids that the high society prefer. Their salaries are typically, being ten thousand dollars a month! Hehe, let me secretly tell you. These three females are really beautiful too. As a man, finding a few beautiful maids is not abnormal." Old Jack seemed to be hinting at something.

"Old Jack, heng heng, right. What do I do now that I have maids but no housekeeper?" Li Yang thought of a problem. There has to be someone to watch over the servants, right?

Old Jack gently laughed and said, "My dear Mu Yi, have you forgotten what our beautiful Miss Lili used to do? She was originally a housekeeper for a rich and powerful individual! She is definitely intelligent and capable, and with someone like this, not putting her to use would really be a waste!"

Li Yang stared blankly for a moment. He knew that Lili used to work

within the house of a rich and powerful individual. When the rich and powerful master later on tried to forcibly take advantage of her, Lili woke up and killed him after transforming. However, Li Yang did not know what Lili did within that family's villa.

"Lili actually had the skills to become a housekeeper! I couldn't tell at all. This works as well, let her supervise those maids. Tian Gang won't come looking for me in the future!" Li Yang recalled Tian Gang's angry appearance when he just came out of training.

"En, it's about time! I should go and train!" After thinking a bit, he spoke a few words to Old Jack before leaving.

The administrator of the Underground Boxing Arena was currently one of the secret rooms in a suite.

"Master, the two athletes who fought just now were not ordinary people... None of our Underground Boxing Arena athletes have surpassed the fourth rank! Now that a fifth rank expert appeared, it's no longer fair. This will have an effect on the fairness of the boxing arena ah... Should we expel that Mu Yi from the Underground Boxing Arena?" a thick-browed male who was dressed in a green suit respectfully asked an elder.

This elder was precisely that green-gowned elder who used his spiritual awareness to probe Li Yang back then.

The green-gowned elder softly laughed and said, "Although I didn't attend that fight, my spiritual awareness scanned over him. His internal energy should have reached the Xiantian Paragon stage, and is not bad. He is Chinese, one of my people. The American Mafia hasn't demanded for his expulsion yet, so why should our Green Mercenaries do so? Moreover, those who cultivate internally within China all have some sort of background; do you know his background?"

That thick-browed big man immediately stared blankly.

The Underground Boxing Arena was backed by both the American Mafia and the Green Mercenaries. If the American Mafia did not want to get rid of Li Yang, why would their Green Mercenaries take action? Moreover, Mu Yi was a Chinese person!

"You child... You still need to work harder. You should not say whatever comes to mind, and think everything over carefully. Don't be too rude and impetuous. Otherwise, it will truly be difficult for you to obtain a seat within the circle of elders!" The green-gowned elder sighed as he spoke.

"Thank you master! Disciple will definitely keep master's instructions close!" The thick-browed large man immediately lowered his head to respond and bowed before leaving.

Currently, the green-gowned elder was alone within the room.

"Why does this Mu Yi look so similar to that disciple back then? Eh, I need to find some time to see exactly where this Mu Yi originated from!" Muttered the green-gowned elder.

—

“Evasion!”

Li Yang made the technique’s hand seals, and his body immediately sank into the ground. He directly went from within the villa to underground, directly hurrying towards the Hudson River.

Underground, Li Yang was one with everything. He passed through all obstacles at a terrifying speed. “Fortunately, there wasn’t some type of heavenly treasure. Otherwise, I would have collided into it!”

Although Li Yang’s Evasion Technique was powerful and was known to be able to travel through ten thousand different things, it could not pass through everything. For example, the Revolving Ice Iron in the North Sea, Scarlet Yang Essence, etc. He couldn’t pass through these heavenly treasures, and in addition, objects imbued with internal qi also could not be passed through. All of the objects here were ordinary objects.

“However, even if I were to meet one by accident, it would still be something to be happy about. For good or bad, I would still be able to obtain a heavenly treasure. It’s impossible for me to create an artifact right now. One, I don’t have enough skill, and two, I don’t have any materials!” Li Yang sighed inwardly.

Suddenly, a refreshing wave flooded his body. Li Yang already entered the Hudson River.

The Hudson river was wide and vast, and Li Yang could not see the

edges at all from within the waters. Of course, the main reason for this was because the visibility within the water was not that great, but this also illustrated the vastness of the Hudson River.

"Li Yang, dive down! Continue to dive deeper! Stop only when Overlord tell you to. Under such a weak water pressure, it won't help your cultivation much at all!" Overlord Xiang Yu's reprimanding voice rang out within his mind. It startled Li Yang, and he immediately dove down.

Li Yang's internal Xiantian qi wrapped itself around his body, forming 'Big Dipper Qi Protection.' It was also impossible for the water to enter the water to enter his clothes; although Li Yang was at the base of the river, his clothes were completely dry.

As he dove deeper and deeper, Li Yang began to feel the increasingly enormous water pressure. Fortunately, upon reaching the Xiantian realm, one could change their Houtian breathing into a Xiantian inner circulation. Li Yang did not have to worry about the lack of oxygen. Currently, he still needed the Xiantian inner circulation. After obtaining the Golden Dan realm, then there was absolutely no need to breathe anymore. One could directly absorb heaven and earth essence to replenish oneself.

"Heavens, I am about to collapse from this water pressure. Overlord, it should be about right now, right? My Big Dipper Qi Protection is cannot endure it anymore!" Li Yang said towards Overlord Xiang Yu.

Xiang Yu suddenly reprimanded, "Idiot, why are you doing using the Big Dipper Qi Protection? Isn't it just a set of clothes? We are so deep under the river already, who would look at you? Arranging the Xiantian internal qi outside your body, of course your Xiantian Qi will deplete

quickly! Fool, quickly collect the Xiantian internal qi into your body and forget about your clothing. You need to use all of your energy on cultivation, and not for protecting a set of clothes!"

"Understood!" Li Yang recollected all of his Xiantian internal qi into his body. Immediately, a powerful pressure attacked his body, and Li Yang continued to dive deeper...

Book 2 Chapter 12.2 – Natural Laws of the Great Primal Chaos

The deeper he dove, the greater the water pressure became. The gigantic water pressure pressed down on Li Yang from all sides, and Li Yang frantically circulated the Xiantian qi within his body. The power of his physical body erupted, resisting the gigantic water pressure. Li Yang found that it was difficult to even move his arm.

Li Yang's face even began to slightly turn red. "How long will I have to endure this for? I don't think I can hold on anymore if we go down any more!" Li Yang already began to feel the terrifying water pressure.

"Alright, just this place then. This great river truly is deep, or else it wouldn't be able to fulfill Overlord's requirements!" After Overlord Xiang Yu said those words, Li Yang exhaled on the spot. He immediately began to circulate his Xiantian qi, stopping himself within the water.

"Although the underwater flow is great, it still can't shake me!" When Li Yang was training the Evasion Technique, he was able to appreciate many things and became assimilated within those things. He was extremely

familiar with the characteristics of water, so currently, he was still following the original force of the water to control his own body.

Li Yang crossed his legs and closed his eyes. Meanwhile, the powerful Overlord Xiang Yu assumed a protective role, after all, no one could be certain what might appear within this great river. Li Yang was at ease as he handed the protection duties to Xiang Yu. The internal qi within his body circulated, resisting the water pressure. Immediately after, his mind entered his sea of consciousness.

His sea of consciousness was vast and without boundaries. That region within his sea of consciousness was emitting endless rays of light, and it was caused by the 'Devil God's Six Extremes,' attracting Li Yang. Li Yang's mind was just like last time, immediately entering the center. With a thought, he opened up the third extreme of the 'Devil God's Six Extremes' — 'Splitting Rivers and Dividing the Ocean.'

Li Yang finally saw the 'Splitting Rivers and Diving the Ocean' scene.

Waterfall!

Water from the 'milky way' dripped down from above the ninth heaven, forming a heavenly overflowing waterfall. The waterfall was vast and boundless, its height beyond measurement. Even though it was merely an image, Li Yang could hear the booming sounds caused by that heavenly overflowing waterfall as it crashed down.

Underneath the waterfall was an ocean that stretched as far as the eyes could see. Water flowed down endlessly, and the ocean became bigger and bigger...

Suddenly, a young taoist lept over the space and came over. The young taoist's fingers were sparkling and translucent, casually drawing out a stroke towards the vast ocean. What was horrifying was that following that stroke, the ocean was split into two halves. The young taoist lightly flung his sleeves, and the divided ocean immediately disappeared, only leaving behind that waterfall from the ninth heaven, rumbling loudly as it cascaded...

"Pay attention to the trajectory of that taoist's finger!" Xiang Yu's voice rang out.

Li Yang immediately repeated that scene, carefully observing that taoist's effortless stroke. However, he didn't know what was wrong, but he just couldn't see that trajectory clearly. He could only vaguely see the secret natural law's trajectory.

Li Yang immediately returned his mind to its original location. Controlling his own body, his right hand meticulously imitated that trajectory. However, imitating it turned out to be rather difficult. Even though Li Yang saw that little bit, he could only imitate the little bit that he saw. His mind was completely unable to provide what he was missing while he imitated the movements.

Li Yang's right hand casually drew out a stroke, and during the moment the right hand made the stroke, Li Yang felt that his mind merged with that vast river. In that instant, even if a small fish blinked its eyes a few times, Li Yang would still be able to feel it. In that mere instant, his understanding of water became much more profound.

What amazed Li Yang even more was that previously, it was incomparably difficult for him to move within the water. Now, however, he could effortlessly cut through the water.

"Overlord, why can't I clearly see that taoist's movements?" Even though Li Yang could see a little bit, that amount was not enough for him to successfully imitate it. He barely copied a small portion, yet this small bit could already allow him to be one with this river; this made Li Yang completely shocked.

Overlord Xiang Yu sighed as he spoke. "That is because Overlord has not completely understood it, and only had small accomplishments in this. That is why the 'Splitting Rivers and Diving the Ocean' Overlord gave you is unclear. You can only see the part that Overlord has gained insights into. In fact, the 'Splitting Rivers and Diving the Ocean' from a certain perspective is an external representation of the Great Primal Chaos' natural laws.

"Natural Laws of the Great Primal Chaos?" When Li Yang heard this, his heart immediately shook.

"Right, precisely Natural Laws of the Great Primal Chaos!" Xiang Yu's tone was full of longing, and incomparable longing.

Suddenly, Xiang Yu helplessly sighed and said, "The Natural Laws of the Great Primal Chaos is something that not a single person has been able to completely understand from the ancient desolate times until now within all six realms. According to Sovereign Chi You's words, these 'Devil God's Six Extremes' all came from the external displays of the Natural Laws of the Great Primal Chaos. As for that young taoist, sovereign Chi You suspects that he was the great taoist born within the Primal Chaos. In

the past, the Great Deity Pangu and the great taoist were born within the Primal Chaos, detached from the six realms! They understood the Natural Laws of the Great Primal Chaos upon birth! The Great Deity Pangu split the heavens and earth apart, and after creating various dimensions, he disappeared. The great taoist also disappeared."

TL: Pangu is supposed to be the creator of the universe in Chinese mythology. Pangu was also mentioned several times in another work by IET: Desolate Era!

Li Yang immediately asked out of curiosity, "Why did that sovereign Chi You guess that this young taoist was the great taoist then?

Xiang Yu immediately said, "Outside of Pangu and the great taoist who were born within the Primal Chaos, who could comprehend the Natural Laws of the Great Primal Chaos? The 'Devil God's Six Extremes' that sovereign Chi You passed down onto me was also imperfect, because sovereign Chi You reached the 'Absolute Supreme Circle' level, which was second only to the 'Natural Laws of the Great Primal Chaos.'

Within the six realms, the sovereign level characters of each realm achieved the 'Absolute Supreme Circle' level. For example, the three Qing of the Immortal Realm, the three sovereigns of the Devil Realm, as well as the sovereign level characters of the other Realms.

The cultivation levels of the Devil Realm and Immortal Realms: Immortal (Devil), Celestial Immortal (Devil General), Golden Celestial Immortal (Devil Commander), Immortal of the Ninth Heaven (Devil King), Immortal

Monarch (Devil Monarch), Immortal Emperor (Devil Emperor); Six great ranks!

"The great taoist understood the Primal Chaos' Natural Laws, and so all movements contained the natural laws. As man, we are inadequate, and could only rely on the Dao to move and imitate the great taoist's trajectory, thus gaining insights into the natural laws. Although we cannot truly understand it, it can still improve our mental cultivation."

Xiang Yu sighed as he spoke.

Right, not even anyone within the six Realms could understand, so who dared to say that they understood it themselves? That's why they could only imitate another's movements, and even though they were giving up on the original, this was still a type of shortcut. If even sovereign Chi You and other figures were imitating, could Li Yang boast shamelessly that he himself could understand the natural laws?

As a result, Li Yang could only exhaustingly cultivate at the base of the river.

A night passed, and Li Yang who was cultivating at the base of the Hudson River completed his training. He slowly opened his eyes, and with a stroke of his right hand, a strand of Xiantian qi was accumulated with it.

Xiu!

Xiantian qi firmly shot out ten meters out, penetrating through a solid rock underwater.

"The power increased by at least ten times. I reached this stage just by copying the trajectory. If I completely understood the Natural Laws of the Primal Chaos, just how much would my attack power reach?" When Li Yang thought of this, he couldn't help but slightly smile. He activated the Evasion Technique to leave the waters, hurrying back to his villa.

Book 2 Chapter 13.1 – Taibai Restaurant

Within Li Yang's bedroom.

"Hu... Seems like this set of clothes is done for. En, I'll clean myself up first!" Li Yang who had just used the Evasion Technique to return to his room looked at himself through the mirror. When he saw that he looked drenched and bedraggled, he couldn't help but laugh. Under such powerful water pressure, his clothes being destroyed was not something unusual.

After washing himself up ten minutes later, Li Yang walked out onto his balcony in his pajamas with a clear expression. It was only six in the morning. The air was fresh and clean, and Manhattan was still a bit cold and lonely; there weren't many people on the streets. While overlooking the Manhattan's 57th street, Li Yang sucked in a deep breath, immediately turning around and walking downstairs.

After arriving downstairs, without ruining Li Yang's expectations, breakfast had already been prepared.

The living room in Li Yang's villa was still relatively large. In the center of the lobby were three sofas, and the three sofas were facing three different directions. The last side had a flat screen television on the wall, and a long dining table stretched behind. Typically, Little Jack and Lili would often be watching television on the sofas.

"Oh... Why did Miss Lili make more than ten different dishes? Five or six for breakfast is enough!" Li Yang saw the rich and sumptuous breakfast on top of the dining table, and his eyes immediately lit up. Although his

mouth were saying those words, he himself still sat down and picked up his chopsticks; he preferred to use his chopsticks.

"Mister Mu Yi, three maids arrived last night. I arranged for them to stay in the rooms downstairs. This breakfast is a small exam from me, and these fifteen dishes were made respectively by those three maids." Miss Lili was dressed completely in a light red, seeming to be rather high-spirited. Behind her were three filipino maids who were respectfully standing.

"We greet Mister Mu!" The three maids bowed as they spoke, and the three maids spoke in pure American English.

Li Yang made a slight brushing movement with his arms and said, "Not bad, the breakfast you all have prepared is truly not bad." After saying this, Li Yang ate another few bites. Suddenly, Li Yang noticed the Little Jack who was drawing an oil painting on the side, fully devoting himself to the drawing.

"Hey, little jack, do you like to draw oil paintings?" Li Yang seemed to be rather curious.

Little Jack furrowed his brows and said in a low voice, "Of course. These past days, I've been drawing every day, only that big brother Mu never came out of the bedroom and never found out." When Li Yang heard his, he couldn't refrain from being startled. Soon after, he curiously walked over to Little Jack's side, and carefully looked at Little Jack's oil painting.

"Oh, I didn't expect this. Little Jack, your oil painting skills are definitely at a master level." Li Yang looked at Little Jack's oil painting with shock.

Even though Little Jack was only seventeen, the skill level of this oil painting was definitely high. Although Li Yang was not proficient at oil paintings, he still understood quite a bit about them.

When Miss Lili heard Li Yang compliment her brother, she also began to happily laugh.

The brother sister pair were in rather good state of minds. Although they were currently constantly cultivating, their enemy who personally killed their mother had already been killed by Li Yang. The only thing they wanted to do within their hearts was to take revenge on the Church. However, the Church's strength was too great, and after thinking about it calmly during these past few days, the siblings also understood that these things could not be rushed. After they reach the Wolf Monarch rank, then they would be able to secretly carry out their revenge against the Church.

"Heng heng, I'm a genius!" Little Jack placed his painting brush down, and arrogantly said this towards Li Yang. He had an extremely prideful look.

Miss Lili then said, "Jack really likes things related to art, and he is extremely talented. He is rather skilled at oil painting, piano, and other things that are similar. As for his oil painting, he won first place in a nationwide eighteen and under competition before!" It was clear that Lili was rather proud of her brother.

After Li Yang heard this, he began to widen his eyes as he looked at Little Jack. Only after a long time did he say, "I truly didn't expect this!"

Little Jack laugher with a hehe sound, and with a lift of his eyebrows, he said, "Haha, it's because I'm a genius..."

Underground Boxing Arena

The opponent howled as his two legs swept towards Li Yang, carrying a strong wind behind them. His complexion was even more malevolent and terrifying.

Meanwhile, Li Yang waited until his opponent's attack was about to land. In that split second, he kicked from the side, the powerful force carrying a whirlwind as it struck his opponent in the chest. That strange trajectory unexpectedly made his opponent unable to guard against it, and as blood blossomed in all directions, his opponent collapsed on the spot. At this moment, the opponent had already died, yet Li Yang still did a flying kick, launching his opponent into the air. Following that, he did a midair tornado kick, firmly sending his opponent flying.

Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu!...

This was another one of Li Yang's victories within the Underground Boxing Arena.

Within one of Manhattan's villas.

Beautiful maids pushed out the dining carts, delivering it to the boss' designated location — The boss' villa.

"Sir, should I... ah!" A resounding shriek rang out from within the maid's

mouth. This was because the fat pig of a boss who was on top of the bedroom bed currently had a hole in his head.

This was Li Yang's tenth B rank mission.

The base of the Hudson River.

Beneath the powerful water pressure, it was absolutely impossible for an ordinary person to bear, yet Li Yang currently had his upper body bare. He was relaxed as he stood underwater, not being affected by the flow of water. The Xiantian qi within Li Yang's body moved in waves, and his muscles were even more tightened. His powerful force resisted the enormous water pressure.

Hu! Hu!

Li Yang began to move from the bottom of the river; a hacking kick, a rotating tornado kick, a chopping air palm... Xiantian qi was accumulated inside, and with each move and form, his heart would flow with the scenes of 'Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists,' 'Sealed Off,' 'Splitting Rivers and Dividing the Ocean'; scenes that contained the essence of the world. Li Yang's movements were also becoming more and more swift, and the resistance within the water was also becoming smaller and smaller. The attacks containing Xiantian qi were also becoming stronger and stronger.

A night passed, and another day of Li Yang's underwater training ended.

—

Time flowed on, and Li Yang's days were passed like usual. Li Yang was currently accepting assassination missions, participating in a few matches, and cultivating at the base of the river. When he was bored, he would tease the cute Little Jack.

Li Yang opened his computer, and entered the page of the 'billion dollar mission.'

"Heavens, why hasn't this solo assassin 'Third' taken action yet? There still haven't been any results until now. It's been twenty days since he accepted this mission. En, whatever, an assassin has to take action thirty days after accepting this mission. Let's just wait a bit longer!" How could Li Yang know what assassins typically do? Most assassins use the majority of their time to understand their target, and the actual actions only took a moment. True assassins don't use their killing moves easily, and use all of their forces when they do!

There's nothing to be done about it, because compared to others, Li Yang's way of carrying out missions was simply too easy.

First, allow Overlord Xiang Yu to search with his primordial spirit and find out his opponent's situation.

Next, use the Evasion Technique to dispatch the steel marbles.

Mission success!

"Overlord, why do I feel like my improvements in strength during this period of time was not the ten fold that I expected?" Li Yang suddenly asked Xiang Yu.

Xiang Yu reprimanded, "You really are biting off more than you can chew. Within this 'Devil God's Six Extremes,' the only attack method that you learned is 'Splitting Rivers and Dividing the Ocean.' Perhaps if you drew out a 'stroke' like the great taoist, then the Xiantian qi you emit might truly increase by tenfold. However, by using your two legs to attack, you really don't have any way to imitate it. This will depend on the amount of insights you gain. If you imitated the great taoist's movement trajectory, with your insights at a high level and your movements closer to the laws of the world, then the power will obviously be greater."

Li Yang also understood. During this period of time, the attack power of his two arms and legs have increased by quite a bit, roughly doubling in offensive strength.

"Sigh, if I had a flying dagger artifact, then my attack power will definitely increase greatly!" Li Yang suddenly sighed and spoke. Ordinary steel daggers had no way of holding that much strength. It may just be enough to defeat Xiantian experts, but towards those experts at a Golden Dan stage and higher, it wouldn't work. Li Yang trained in the flying dagger since he was young, and so he still had some special feelings towards it.

"Li Yang, don't be discouraged. You can go the Dao of emotion and the Dao of Flying Daggers! Currently, your Flying Dagger is only the flying dagger of the mortal world. That Li Xunhuan's Flying Dagger Dao is the true Flying Dagger from the Cultivator realm. As for the Dao of swords,

the sword immortal is known as the number one attack power within the Immortal Realm. As of how great the power of the Dao of Flying Daggers is, even Overlord cannot imagine. If you are lucky, and you can cultivate that true Flying Dagger Great Dao, then the power will definitely be great!"

TL: Reminder Li Xunhuan is Li Yang's ancestor, also a well known Flying Dagger user in the Wuxia universe

Although Xiang Yu was not that clear how terrifying the Dao of Flying Daggers was, but he felt an aura from that 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' handwritten book that Li Yang studied. That wave of blade aura was a blade aura that could overcome every obstacle! That blade's aura level was extremely high, and was far from something that Li Yang could feel. Although Li Yang constantly flipped through that book, he couldn't feel it at all. However, Xiang Yu reached the Devil King rank, and his skill was even greater than that Li Xunhuan. As a result, he obviously could feel it.

The Flying Dagger's aura was extremely firm and Yang! It was condensed to the limit, and there was no stronghold it couldn't overcome!

Could it be that this was precisely the blade aura from the Dao of Flying Daggers?

Book 2 Chapter 13.2 – Taibai Restaurant

Ever since Miss Lili was in charge of the three meals everyday, the

frequency Li Yang attended Taibai restaurant decreased. Even if he went, it was to drink Erguotou.

Within Taibai Restaurant

Li Yang strolled inside. He immediately noticed Ge Pu at a table facing the window, eating some appetisers and drinking some wine.

"Hey! Big bro Ge, isn't it rather boring to drink alone? I'll drink a few cups with you!" While speaking, Li Yang walked over to Ge Pu's side. He did not care what kind of reaction Ge Pu had, and directly lifted up the wine cup to pour some, as well as directly picking up a pair of chopsticks.

"Mu Yi you brat!" When Ge Pu saw Li Yang, he scolded him while talking. Soon after, he began to laugh and chat with Li Yang as they ate and drank.

"Weng weng..." His phone began to violently shake.

Gu Pu took out the cellphone from his bosom and answered the phone. "This is Taibai Restaurant owner Ge Pu. May I ask who you are? Ah, it's Xinxin's teacher, how are you teacher... What?!" Ge Pu cried out in alarm, suddenly standing up from his seat. His complexion immediately turned paled.

"Alright, I understand. I'll come over quickly!" When Ge Pu finished speaking, he immediately turned off his cell phone.

When Li Yang saw Ge Pu lose control like that, he couldn't help but ask,

"Brother Ge, did something happen? Why are you in such a panic?"

Ge Pu's face was extremely ugly as he said, "Xinxin fainted at school." Following that, he didn't say anything else to Li Yang, and directly yelled towards the sales counter, "A'Lan, come quickly with me to the hospital." Ge Pu pulled his wife, and told the service staff this before quickly leaving.

TL: Ah in front of a name is a term of endearment. I left it as A'Lan. Lan is the part of Ge Pu's wife's name

"Xinxin is brother Ge's treasure. If something happened to her, then it would not be good. Right, shouldn't there be a school infirmary? Why was Xinxin sent to the hospital? Could it be that the school infirmary couldn't treat her?" Li Yang felt his heart tremble. If the school infirmary couldn't treat her, then that would truly be bad.

Li Yang returned to his own villa, however, the events regarding Ge Pu's daughter hung around his mind. After all, his relationship with Ge Pu was not bad, and through his interaction with Ge Pu, he knew just how much he doted on his daughter.

"En, I'll go to Taibai Restaurant again at night to take a look at the situation. There's no point in worrying over it now." Li Yang was reclining on one of the sofas in the living room. He helplessly sighed and moved over to his laptop. He placed the notebook computer on his lap and began to browse the assassin organization's webpage.

"Sigh, the number of A rank missions are too little. I just got promoted to an A rank assassin, yet there aren't any A rank missions for me. It really is disappointing!" Li Yang was looking at the list of missions. Although there were three A rank missions, these A rank missions were already in the process of being carried out; it was impossible for him to accept them.

As for the top mission on the list, the 'billion dollar' mission, there was also someone currently on that mission.

"Why hasn't that assassin reputed as number one taken action yet? If he succeeds, then he succeeds, and if he fails, he fails, but he's not taking action! It really makes people anxious." Li Yang seemed to be a bit unsatisfied. As an assassin, no matter what mission it was, he still finished it with no difficulty. Now, however, there were simply no A rank missions.

"Whatever, I'll first accept a B rank mission. Either way, there's nothing to do. For better or for worse, I can still make several million dollars!" This was the attitude Li Yang had towards these missions. Within his eyes, regardless of what mission it was, there was simply no difficulty factor. After setting out, he would immediately succeed.

As for other assassins, each time they accepted a mission, they would all be cautious and solemn. After all, the mission targets all had quite a few bodyguards. Each time they set out on a mission, they would always be lingering around life or death. What they earned was money from the hands of the death god! For them, the higher the level of the mission, the more careful they would be. As a result, C rank missions are the ones that were accepted the most.

Suddenly, one of the A rank missions that was being carried out

suddenly changed. Li Yang immediately clicked it to take a look.

"The poor fellow that accepted this mission last failed. Ha, this luck really isn't bad. Whatever, I wanted a mission, so it directly gave me one." When Li Yang saw that 'fifteen million dollars,' his eyes immediately lit up.

His target — The chairman of the Golden State Corporation in Dallas, Texas: Mister Benjamin.

"En, it actually requires me to leave New York. It really is a bit troublesome, but an A rank mission is relatively more straightforward. The participation fee of a boxing match is only ten thousand or so dollars, yet this single A rank mission already surpassed ten million!" Li Yang smiled slightly.

For Li Yang, this mission was quite simple. For other assassins, however, what A rank missions represented was — a higher mortality rate! If Li Yang did not have the Evasion Technique and barely had the level of a fifth rank expert, he definitely would not be so arrogant. This would absolutely make others sigh in lamentation, as the Evasion Technique from the Immortal Realm truly was quite amazing. Of course, our powerful Overlord Xiang Yu's searches with his primordial spirit was also a big factor. With the scouting of the primordial spirit, there was no one in the Mortal Realm that could avoid it.

At nightfall, the crescent moon was suspended in the night sky.

Currently, Li yang was walking urgently towards Taibai Restaurant. His mind had constantly been occupied by the matters surrounding Ge Pu's daughter Xinxin.

When he had just walked near Taibai Restaurant, Li Yang was immediately started. This was because he saw a sign hung outside Taibai Restaurant — 'As the owner, I humbly need money. I wish to sell Taibai Restaurant, so if you are interested, enter the restaurant so we can discuss this in person.'

Li Yang immediately felt that things were off. Since things escalated to the point where Ge Pu had to sell the restaurant, he knew that things had turned for the worse.

"Ge, we will put out two million dollars at the most. This is already our highest offer. Even though this Taibai Restaurant is in the middle of Manhattan, the land is not large, moreover it is on 57th street. Two million is already the highest price!" A brown haired male in a blue suit was wearing a smile on his face. As he sat there, there were two african-american bodyguards.

"Mister Dennis, you are joking right? Not mentioning the construction cost of the restaurant, just the land alone is worth more than this price. Mister Dennis, the original price of three million that I started with is a price that you are already aware of. This is definitely my lowest price. If it wasn't because I truly needed the money, it would be impossible for me to put up such a low price!" Currently, Ge Pu's face was flushed red with anger and embarrassment. Currently, he was in such an urgent need of money that he was worried crazy; otherwise, how could he possible want to sell this restaurant?

Ge Pu's wife Lan Sao was a bit more calm and collected than Ge Pu.

"Mister Dennis, if we make this public, I believe that quite a few people will want to purchase this Restaurant. At that time, three million is most likely not enough!" Lan Sao was extremely calm as she said this.

However, Dennis merely snickered inwardly. If he didn't know the other party's circumstances, why would he offer two million? Currently the couple's daughter urgently needed money; otherwise, it was impossible for them to carry out the 'money burning' M-ray therapy!

"Two million! I hope Ge Pu and his wife think this over carefully. I will await your phone call at any time! Dennis did not back off, and slightly bowed in preparation of leaving.

Ge Pu and his wife were immediately worried. If it was two million, even if they added in their savings and sold their house, it still wouldn't be enough! However, currently, their daughter couldn't wait any longer. They needed to carry out the surgery immediately. Ge Pu clenched his teeth, and immediately wanted to make a compromise.

"Brother Ge, why didn't you tell me even though such a huge matter happened! This is my credit card, and there is ten million on it! Don't hesitate to use it!" Li Yang rushed into the restaurant, and anger was clearly shown on his face. He took out the credit card from his pocket and placed it in front of Ge Pu.

Book 2 Chapter 14.1 – Gunman Organization

The cute Mister Dennis immediately turned stupid. He looked at Li Yang who just appeared and stared blankly for a long time before saying, "You, you..." He just couldn't get the words out. This Taibai Restaurant was about to become a cash cow. If they had gathered together several merchants, it would roughly reach at least four million dollars. Ge Pu opening it up for the rock bottom price of three million was basically because they had no choice. Seeing that this Restaurant was about to be under his possession, he took out this underhanded method. Yet, what made them the most depressed was that this Li Yang took out ten million dollars; it made them completely speechless.

Li Yang turned around and gave Dennis a glance, and contrary to expectation, he smiled and said, "Mister Dennis, you wanted to buy this Taibai Restaurant for two million, you really do have the brains to do business. Haha, I am confused, Mister Dennis, why aren't you leaving right now? Could it be that you want to put out ten million on this Taibai Restaurant?"

Dennis hatefully looked at Li Yang. He did not say anything, and left just like that with his bodyguards. Someone who could casually take out ten million was not someone who Dennis could casually offend.

"Brother Mu Yi, this..." Ge Pu really didn't know what to do after seeing the credit card in front of him.

Li Yang turned his head and looked at Ge Pu, saying in anger, "Brother Ge, although we brothers haven't known each other for that long, but for better or for worse, we are still brothers. I live right around here, yet you

didn't tell me after something happened to your daughter. This is a bit too too humiliating. Take this money from me, you must accept it. This is the money I'm giving you for your daughter's medical expenses!"

Ge Pu's eyes immediately reddened. He was an extremely old-fashioned person, almost like someone from the ancient times.

Riches and honor cannot lead to obscene and excessive behavior. The powerful cannot wrong the weak. One should not sigh while eating and drinking.

Even though his daughter was diagnosed with the 'RML749' disease, he still thought of selling his restaurant first for her treatment. Li Yang had money, this was something that Ge Pu obviously knew. Being able to own a villa within Manhattan, he was definitely rich and powerful. However, even though things were like this, he still chose to sell the restaurant. He did not want to accept other people's money for no cause and no reason, forget about an amount as large as ten million. ('RML749' disease was just discovered in 2011, and was one of the excessive cases of cancer. However, by using the 'M-Ray Therapy' that recently came out of research, it could still be cured. However, the cost to use this 'M-Ray Therapy' was extremely high. Even Ge Pu who could be considered relatively well off had to sell his restaurant to pay for it.

"Brother Mu Yi, you understand how this big bro is. Big bro is extremely happy that you have these intentions, however, I definitely cannot accept this money. It's not that big bro doesn't have money, as he'll have money as long as he sells this restaurant. Brother Mu Yi, it's still best if you take it back!" Ge Pu firmly refused Li Yang's money.

Li Yang immediately felt his head throbbing. After his interaction with

Ge Pu thus far, he already knew that Ge Pu was this kind of person. Even his attire was like that of an old-fashioned person, and definitely followed the moral standard of those officials and sages absolutely.

Li Yang suddenly stood up and spoke out of anger. "Brother Ge Pu, what are you trying to do by saying this? Huh?! To have principles? But your principles is founded on the life of your daughter Xinxin! Sell the restaurant? Heng, even if the surgery is a success, with Xinxin being so frail after the surgery, do you guys still have the money to take care of her? This is not having principles, this was being old-fashioned, being inflexible!"

When Ge Pu heard this, his heart trembled. His face immediately became deathly white. "My principles are established on the life of my daughter!" This began to sway Ge Pu's principles.

When Li Yang saw Ge Pu like this, his heart also felt rather troubled. He suddenly thought of an idea, and Li Yang immediately became excited and continued. "Today, even if you don't want to accept this money, you still have to! This is because I am not giving you this money, but rather giving it to your daughter! You are only accepting it on her behalf. You don't have the power to refuse it, so even if it's refused, it will have to be your daughter that refuses it. If Xinxin refuses to accept it, I will take the money and leave. Otherwise, you must accept it on Xinxin's behalf!" Li Yang spoke these words like a scoundrel.

Xinxin refuse? Ge Pu's daughter was currently still unconscious, so how could she refuse! As a result, he absolutely had to accept this money.

When Ge Pu thought of his own daughter, he immediate clenched his teeth. He lifted his head and looked at Li Yang. "Brother Mu Yi, I will

accept this money. However, I will give you this restaurant. I, Ge Pu also understand that this restaurant is only worth four million dollars, and exchanging it for your ten million is already making brother suffer losses. However, you still need to accept it, to at least make my heart a bit more at ease. If you don't accept the restaurant, then as the big brother, I truly don't have the face to accept this money!"

Li Yang became foolish. How did he end up obtaining this restaurant?

Lao San also said from the side, "Brother Mu Yi, just accept it. Our family's Old Ge is this type of person. If you don't accept it, then it would be impossible for him to accept this money, and I, Lan Sao also would not be able to accept it. This ten million is not a small number!"

When Li Yang saw the couple like this, he couldn't help but feel rather gloomy. Currently, this ten million to him really wasn't that much. He was about to carry out an A rank mission soon, and after succeeding, he would have another ten million dollars.

"Alright, alright. However, I don't have time to take care of this restaurant. Brother Ge and Lan Sao, how about you two help me manage it? Li Yang laughed while speaking, laughing deviously.

Ge Pu and Lan Sao immediately accepted on the spot. They still had quite some feelings towards this restaurant, and were not willing to leave it themselves!

"En, now that I am the boss, I 'll announce a decision. For the Restaurant's share, I will announce that 25 percent is for Lan Sao, and 25 percent is for brother Ge. This will be my salary towards the two

managers. From today forth, you guys will not have no salary. Right, I still have fifty percent, so I should still be considered the boss, right?!" Li Yang faced the foolish Ge Pu and his wife, and smiled slightly. Following that, before the two had the chance to react, Li Yang took advantage that fact to say, "Ah, I still have an extremely important thing to take care of, so I will leave first!"

After saying those things, Li Yang walked out of the restaurant at an astonishing speed.

Li Yang originally wanted to return the restaurant to Ge Pu and his wife. However, since he knew Ge Pu's nature, and knew that as long as he gave the restaurant back, Ge Pu would definitely refuse the ten million. That's why he made a compromise, giving the two of them a total of 50 percent of the stock share.

Even if he gave them this share of the company, Li Yang was still worried that Ge Pu would not accept it due to his nature. That's why he said that the share was their 'salary,' and that the two of them would no longer have a salary in the future. As for these words, in actuality, fifty percent of every month's shares in profits far surpassed any salary.

When Ge Pu and his wife looked at Li Yang's disappearing figure, their eyes began to redden.

"I, Ge Pu, in this life made quite a few friends. However, the only one who is willing to save me from such a crisis for fire and water without a single bit of return would be this brother Mu Yi." When Lan Sao thought back to when the two of them were on the phone previously to ask friends to borrow money, she also began to lower her head in shame.

"A'Lan, we really owe him a lot this time!" Ge Pu hugged his wife as he sighed.

Book 2 Chapter 14.2 – Gunman Organization

Li Yang was on his way back to his villa.

Weng~~~ The cellphone in his pocket began to vibrate.

Li Yang took out his cellphone. After seeing the caller ID, he immediately said, "Old Jack, is there something you need?"

"My dear Mu Yi, tomorrow night at eight is the first top division fight that you will participate in. In the future, all of your opponents won't be weak, so you definitely won't be as bored as you are right now!"

"Ah, I got it. Isn't it just a top division fight?!" Li Yang seemed to not care that much. He casually replied, and then Li Yang suddenly opened his eyes and asked in shock, "Top division fight? Ah! Old Jack, was the last fight I participated in my thirtieth high division fight? Did I already get promoted a division? Why didn't I notice, and how come no one reminded me?"

Old Jack laughed bitterly on the phone and said, "Remind you? Like usual, right as soon as the match ended, you immediately coldly got off the stage and left, not even caring about the final judge's decision. Not

caring about the decision is whatever, since even I don't care for that. However, how was I supposed to tell you?"

Li Yang was startled, and immediately recalled that during this time period, he cultivated every night at the base of the Hudson River. As soon as a match ended, he would immediately hurry back to his villa before using the Evasion technique to get to the base of the Hudson River; he really did not pay much attention to Old Jack.

"Oh, I apologize. I had a few things to take care of during this period of time. Alright, tomorrow night I will definitely arrive on time. En, let just do thing like this." After speaking, Li Yang hung up the phone.

After returning to the villa, Li Yang used the Evasion Technique and traveled to the base of the Hudson River.

Hu~~~

This was not the sound Li Yang's breathing, but was instead the sound of the waves of spiritual essence quickly revolving around Li Yang's body.

Li Yang noticed that the density of the heaven and earth spiritual essence at the base of the Hudson River was much thicker, and the quality contained far surpassed that of the dry land above. Under ordinary circumstance, the density of worldly spiritual essence should be more dense than underwater, yet the fact was that this Hudson River was quite abnormal.

Li Yang had also tried to find the source previously, but he was unable

to locate the origin.

"Forget it. Since I can't find it, then I'll just focus on cultivating!" Waves of dense green energy streams circled around Li Yang's body, continuously being absorbed. While Li Yang was absorbing the worldly spiritual essence to improve his cultivating level, he was also imitating the 'Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists,' 'Sealed Off' and 'Splitting Rivers and Dividing the Ocean' movements. Each time he imitated it, it would give him a different type of feeling. Li Yang's mental state was also slowly changing, and as a result, his mental cultivation was also quietly yet quickly improving.

Li Yang's entire body also began to move. Within the surging undercurrents, Li Yang was smoothly sending out fists and kicks. It was as if the water pressure did not affect him at all.

To Xiang Yu, Li Yang's punches and kicks were definitely full of holes. However, in the eyes of a Security Bureau 11th Division expert, this was absolutely perfect, without the slightest flaw. Even if a few cultivators from the Kunlun Paradise came over, they still most likely would not be able to identify the faults in the current Li Yang. That was because... Li Yang's insights into the natural laws were already higher than those cultivators by quite a bit. After all, the amount of people qualified to have the opportunity to study directly from the 'Devil God's Six Extremes' was extremely few even within the Devil Realm.

"Observe the images of the Devil God's Six Extremes carefully, and then look at yourself. This difference is not a small amount!"

Currently in London.

"Uncle Lan, have you uncovered the identity of that guy who requested this mission?" Lin Tianyu asked this over the phone.

Uncle Lan sighed and replied, "Young master, everything regarding the identity of people from the underground world is extremely confidential, basically impossible to uncover. I also asked some high level figures from the American Mafia and Green Mercenaries, hoping that they would be a bit more accommodating and give our Holy Forest Group some face. However, the American Mafia and Green Mercenaries paid absolutely no attention to our Holy Forest Group!"

When Lin Tianyu heard this, his face immediately darkened by quite a bit. He clenched his teeth and said, "Green Mercenaries, American Mafia!"

However, regardless of how hard Lin Tianyu contemplated, he still didn't have the slightest idea on how to defeat the Green Mercenaries and the American Mafia. After all, they had the power to be known as members of the five supreme criminal organizations; any one of them could easily erase his Holy Forest Group.

"It seems like we have to use our last trick!" A fierce expression appeared in Lin Tianyu's eyes.

"Uncle Lan, you don't need to investigate this matter anymore. The Church's people has taken so much money from us each year, yet they never felt their hands get hot. Now, it should be time for them to do a

few things for us," Lin Tianyu coldly spoke. Towards the Church, he never had a favorable impression. However, he had no choice but to adhere himself under the Church's banner.

As for the world's top 500, other than the federal enterprises, the rest of the private industries were mostly connected to the Five Supreme Criminal Organizations. If not, then they had a relationship with the Church or the Dark Parliament. Even though there were a few special ones, they all held tremendous influence in the underground world.

His Lin family hasn't been established for a long time, and its foundation was not that deep. Although it also had quite a bit of power in the underground world, it truly was a frail amount. It was impossible for them to withstand the attack from a powerful force.

When Uncle Lan heard this, he immediately began to quickly speak. "Young master, if you want the Church's people to help, then your attitude need to be a bit better. You will most likely have to bring quite a bit of money over. The Church's power is great, and we cannot irritate them!"

Lin Tianyu nodded his head, and his face became even more overcast.

He was the magnificent successor of the Holy Forest Group, yet he had to depend on the Church to do things. Whenever he went out, he would always have bodyguards from the 'Black Devil' bodyguard company. Even though the 'Black Devil' bodyguard company represented that his status was high, from another perspective, it proved that the Holy Forest Group's underground forces were not sufficient.

As for those who truly possessed great strength, all of their bodyguards

were trained with their own power; why would they ever use the 'Black Devil' company? However, to establish a powerful underground force was not that easy. Lin Aotian and other figures only had a fair amount of underground strength, absolutely not enough to protect their own family.

"There will be a day when I will make it so that my Lin family no longer has to depend on the Church." Lin Tianyu fiercely spoke as he looked at the cyan armor around his arms and back.

Suddenly, the matters he were pondering over in his mind were finally settled. Lin Tianyu's expression was resolute as he said, "Grandpa, although our family's internal techniques are important, underground forces under our family are even more important." Lin Tianyu already decided, and decided to pass down his family's internal techniques that were previously restricted to the people he raised himself.

While Lin Tianyu's plan expanded into his family's underground power, Li Yang was instead working hard to improve his body's cultivation...

Book 2 Chapter 14.3 – Gunman Organization

Within the bathroom in Li Yang's villa.

The ice-cold water battered Li Yang's body. Even though it was already late autumn, Li Yang still enjoyed this coldness. Li Yang's body seemed to be perfectly proportionate, attaining the golden ratio. The muscles covering his body made him look even more masculine.

Hu!

Li Yang only wore a pair of shorts, and just like that, he directly walked towards the balcony and grabbed his pajamas.

Above the balcony, the cold winds blew over. The droplets of water that dropped on Li Yang's body immediately evaporated, and even though his body momentarily felt a piercing coldness, he actually had a strange smiling expression on his face. With some movements of his arms, his pajamas suddenly covered his body. Just like this, Li Yang stood on his balcony with his pajamas covering his body.

Li Yang liked to breath the fresh and clean morning air as he overlooked the people below his balcony.

The day passed, and night arrived.

Eight at night, Underground Boxing Arena stadium number 1.

"My dear Mu Yi, today is the first day that you are fighting in the Underground Boxing Arena number 1. Before the fight, there is a demonstration. This is something that all top division fighters have to go through, so reveal a bit of your strength," said Old Jack with a slight smile.

Li Yang nodded. Every fighter that participated in a top division fight had to 'demonstrate' a bit. This was something that he was aware of.

The Underground Boxing Arena regulations: There are two ways to leave the Underground Boxing Arena; one, a top division fighter who completed eight rounds can immediately challenge the Devil King. After losing to the Devil King, one can immediately leave the Underground Boxing Arena.

Two, fight for a total of three years as a top division boxer. Each year, you need to fight at least ten rounds. After three years, one can immediately leave the underground boxing arena.

However, Li Yang knew that after challenging the Devil King, if you lose, then your chance of dying was 99%. Even if you didn't die, you would still be seriously injured, such as being paralyzed, disabled, etc. In addition, surviving in the Underground Boxing Arena for three years is even more difficult than challenging the Devil King. Even if they chose to fight the Devil King, they would still have to challenge their way there fight after fight. Three years! That was simply too long.

"Ladies and Gentleman, let us welcome our powerful boxer 'Mu' as he arrives. He will bring us his charismatic demonstration! I believe that his mystical eastern martial art attacks has already made everyone intoxicated! However, everyone always feels that time is too short, but don't worry! The demonstration must reveal three types of skills, so let us enjoy this magnificent meal for our minds today!" The judge was excited as he shouted loudly.

Following that, a completely black clad Li Yang slowly walked onto the fighting arena.

Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu!...

When Li Yang walked on top of the fighting stadium, cheers immediately bursted out. The unconditionally cold Li Yang brought them an unconventional type of feeling. He was calm and cool-headed. Regardless of when it was or what type of chaos occurred, he would still remain unaffected. It was as if there was no one who could defeat him, and this allowed Li Yang to emit an indescribable type of aura. It was also precisely this aura and charm that affected his spectators.

Li Yang suddenly flung his right hand, and his jacket was immediately thrown off. Just like this, Li Yang's upper body was naked in front of all the spectators. Even though his bronze-colored skin didn't have too many protruding muscles, it still gave others the feeling that they contained powerful strength.

Li Yang turned around and nodded towards Old Jack. Old Jack immediately waved, and two men in black holding MK12 submachine guns in their hands walked on top of the stadium.

"Ladies and Gentleman, the first thing that 'Mu' will demonstrate is blocking bullets with his body. Moreover, he will be blocking those from a submachine gun. In the past, when top division fighters used their bodies to block bullets, handguns would always be used. The penetrative force of MK12 submachine guns are twice that of ordinary handgun bullets. Everyone should enjoy Mu's demonstration to their heart's content!" The judge on the side narrated towards the spectators.

Hearing the judge's words, the spectators below all began to shout and cry out.

Hu!

Li Yang's mouth was slightly opened as he inhaled a deep breath. The sound of that breath was like that of a gale being agitated. The muscles on Li Yang's body immediately became taut, and the powerful strength of his muscles attacked the vision of the spectators.

"Shoot!" The judge commanded with a shout.

After this period of cultivation, Li Yang's mental cultivation was already rather profound. He clearly looked at the two submachine guns as they each continuously shot out ten bullets.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!...

The bullets were shot towards Li Yang's body, and after slightly sinking into his muscles, it was as if they couldn't go any deeper at all. Immediately after, they dropped onto the ground.

There was a total of twenty bullets. Each bullet fell onto the ground, and Li Yang's skin seemed to not even have the slightest trace of a mark.

The rich and powerful spectators below immediately began to cheer and cry out. At the same time, all of their eyes emitted light. They were all thinking how great it would be if they themselves no longer had to fear bullets. However, these rich and powerful individuals who loved the Underground Boxing Arena deeply knew how terrifying the training the fighters had to go through was. As absolutely none of them dared to

attempt it, they could only watch to their heart's content.

"This first performance can't count for much. Our 'Mu' will bring us a never before seen 'Bullet Shoot Eye'! Haha, ladies and gentleman, don't be amazed. Of course, it's impossible for it to actually be a bullet shooting at the eyes. Our 'Mu' will use his fingers to sandwich the bullet before it reaches his eyes." The judge smiled as he spoke, and as he looked down at the rich and powerful people below, he was hoping to see the shock in their eyes.

Sure enough, the judge succeeded. The people below all became stupid. Using fingers to stop bullets, this was truly unheard of within the underground boxing arena.

Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu! Mu!...

They began to cheer and acclaim. They used their shouts to support the 'Mu' that they liked, and they could only use these cheers to express their current excitement.

"Shoot!"

The two special gunman's skills were top notch. The two submachine guns each shot out a bullet, their goal — Li Yang's eyes.

Hu!

Wind rose, and with a shadow flashing, Li Yang's right hand was raised.

The two bullets were both within the crack between his fingers!

Li Yang didn't actually use two hands to separately clench the bullets, but rather only used his right hand. In that instant, he caught both bullets, causing the people below to be absolutely astonished.

"We can begin the third demonstration!" In spite of everyone's dumbstruck expression, Li Yang reminded the judge. When the judge was reminded, he immediately said, "The third demonstration is called kicking the bullet. Moreover, it's twenty bullets!"

The two people below once again became sluggish. Twenty bullets, kicking with the feet? How terrifying will the speed of the leg be? The submachine gun can most likely completely finish its round in two seconds, meaning that the leg will have to kick out ten times per second; this was definitely a terrifying kicking speed! However, how could these spectators know that this was merely something that Li Yang could demonstrate using 2000 crystals worth of strength.

"Shoot!"

Li Yang's eyes slightly glanced at the pillar beside the stadium. There was a hint of a smile on his lips, and immediately after, he looked towards the bullets.

The twenty bullets were shot out in succession, and Li Yang's eyes suddenly lit up. His two legs formed after images in that instant. In a flash, everyone could no longer see Li Yang's legs. Peng! Peng! Peng!... The spectators could only hear the bullets as they collided with Li Yang's

legs.

The sound of them dropping!

Li Yang had a slight smile on the corners of his lips. Meanwhile, that judge turned foolish.

"Heavens, heavens... Mu, Mu... Mu, he actually... he actually..." The judge pointed at a pillar beside the boxing arena, and he couldn't even get out another sentence. The spectators below who were facing the pillar could also see that pillar.

On top of that pillar, twenty bullets were firmly planted inside. Moreover, they formed the character 木 (Mu).

Just now, Li Yang was kicking the bullets. In the split second that he kicked the bullets, he even made the bullets sink into that pillar. Just how terrifying would the strength of his kick have to be? Moreover, he even formed a character; just how high had the level of control of Li Yang's kicks reached?

"Im-impossible?!" All of the spectators became stupid. The spectators nearby who couldn't see it all squeezed their way over, pushing each other out of the way to see that pillar.

Seeing the rich and powerful individuals below shoving each other out of the way, Li Yang laughed inwardly. "How could you guys understand the natural laws? It seems like I still attained some results after cultivating the 'Devil God's Six Extremes.' It was just a small experiment, yet it was

still effective. I estimate that the control of my Flying Daggers should have far surpassed that of the past!"

Using the natural laws as a base for gaining insights, his own mental scope improved. It was definitely a complete rebirth for his mind, and in the future, regardless of whether it is an attack from his physical body or from a weapon, they would both be different from the past!

Book 2 Chapter 15.1 – Master Bo

In the blink of an eye, twenty kicks were sent out continuously. It changed the trajectories of the high speed bullets, kicking them into the pillar. Moreover, the bullets formed a Chinese character; this was definitely difficult for others to conceive. Regardless of who it was, none of them could believe that this was reality.

However, that pillar was instead telling them that everything did indeed happened.

"Oh my God, is this a miracle from God? Ladies and Gentlemen, open your eyes! Let's admire this miracle! This is a miracle, definitely a miracle!" The judge was finding it hard to believe as he shouted out, and it seemed as if he was going to swallow the microphone.

At this time, the Underground Boxing Arena's gambling rates for Li Yang immediately changed. The rates decreased to the extreme, almost to the point of being negligible. This implied that if you betted on Li Yang, even if he won, you would still not earn that much money.

"What does this mean? The rates were changed? This won't do, definitely won't do." Those rich and powerful individuals who wanted to bet shouted out. After seeing Li Yang's performance, they felt an unswerving support for him. They firmly believed that Li Yang was unbeatable, and that by betting on him, they would definitely profit without any risks.

"Haha, we had betted on 'Mu' a long time ago. Who told you guys not to bet on 'Mu' from the start?" A few of the other rich and powerful

members immediately spoke complacently. The rates of the Underground Boxing Arena gambling could change at a moment's notice. The time you decided to bet determined the rates that you were betting with.

"Ladies and gentleman, below is the first top division fight of the miraculous 'Mu.' Everyone, prepare to enjoy Mu's performance!" The judge's resounding voice caused the people below to all focus their attention.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Revolving tornado kick! His two feet were like a whirlwind, easily sending his opponent flying out of the arena with a kick, dying on the spot! They were basically not at the same level. Regardless of how powerful the opponent looked, in front of Li Yang's eyes, they were nothing more than a paper tiger.

The match ended, so he left! Li Yang was extremely straightforward

Within Li Yang's villa.

It was the same as before. Li Yang was going to use the Evasion

Technique to cultivate the 'Demon God's Six Extremes' at the base of the Hudson River.

Weng~~~

Right when Li yang was about to leave, his cellphone rang.

Li Yang immediately picked up his phone.

"Mu Yi, this is Ge Pu. Hurry over to the restaurant, there is something extremely important that needs your attention." Ge Pu's voice seemed to be a bit hurried.

Li Yang was startled, immediately saying, "If there is anything, big bro can take care of it. I don't have any objections towards big bro's ideas." Li Yang did not have any greedy thoughts towards Taibai Restaurant, and in his heart, Taibai Restaurant still belonged to Ge Pu and his wife. The only difference from before was that now — he could go to the restaurant and drink without paying.

"This matter is extremely important. Mu Yi, you have to personally come." Ge Pu seemed to be a bit worried.

Li Yang immediately gave his consent. "Alright, alright, alright. I'll hurry over and arrive soon!"

After speaking, Li Yang immediately got dressed before going down the stairs.

—

"Ah Gang, you don't need to be embarrassed. Every day, after Mister Mu Yi goes up, he never comes back down. Don't be worried!"

Li Yang who just arrived at the staircase heard this, and immediately stopped his steps. He carefully extended his head over to see that currently happening. Tian Gang was being pulled by Lili like a shy young wife being pulled by her husband.

"Wow, this Tian Gang is quite formidable. Back then, he told me that he liked Miss Lili, but I would never have thought that in such a short period of time, he actually received her affection? I couldn't tell ah... Isn't he usually rather foolish? You really can't judge a book by its cover... Who knew that Tian Gang was such a love saint?" However, as Li Yang looked at the bewildered Tian Gang, he couldn't see the 'love saint' at all.

Tian Gang sat upright on the couch, his heart extremely nervous. He had always secretly liked Lili, but simply couldn't say it out loud out of foolishness. However, he never thought that today, Miss Lili would instead go to him and confess, saying a bunch of things. She said that she fell in love with Tian Gang when he saved her, and after hearing all of that, Tian Gang's face was completely red. His head began to feel feverish, and in a state of muddle headedness, his body felt as if it was floating in the clouds. He felt like he was deep inside a dreamland.

Seeing Miss Lili being the dominant one below and the Tian Gang who was reacting stupidly, Li Yang became nervous.

"Ah, big bro Ge Pu is still waiting for me. I'll have to wait until I return to find out about this Tian Gang's romantic story!" Li Yang immediately used the Evasion Technique to directly exit the villa before heading towards Taibai Restaurant.

Currently, within Taibai Restaurant.

A group of men wearing black suits were standing inside Taibai Restaurant. A golden-haired male wearing white sportswear was casually chatting with Ge Pu.

Ge Pu saw Li Yang who was walking inside, and immediately turned around to welcome him.

"These people came to collect protection fees. They are one of New York's two great criminal gangs, the gunman organization. I've already paid this year's protection fees, but today, they came to ask for it again," Ge Pu said in a low voice.

When Li Yang heard this, he shot a glance towards their group. He laughed strangely; there was actually someone who wanted to collect protection fees from his own territory? It really was funny. Li Yang knew quite clearly that the gangs like the Green Mercenaries or other world-class powers would definitely not do something like collect protection fees. Those who collected protection fees were all local gangs. He truly did not place these gangs in his eyes.

"En? It has already been paid once, yet you still came to ask for more?" Li Yang suddenly laughed, and seemed to not mind it that much. "Forget it, I don't want to bicker with you folks. Isn't it just that little bit of money?" Li Yang decided that with these people, it was better not to argue with them.

That handsome blonde male in white sportswear stood up on the spot after seeing Li Yang. He smiled and said, "Hello, Mister Mu Yi. Congratulations on becoming the new owner of Taibai Restaurant. In the past, we have always worked cheerfully with Mister Ge, so I believe that in the future, we can also work together cheerfully."

Li Yang seemed to have not paid attention to the blonde male's words, directly saying, "Oh, right. My big bro Ge Pu said that he already paid a protection fee earlier. Why is it that you guys are here to collect it a second time?"

That blonde male immediately smiled and said, "Mister Mu Yi, this Taibai Restaurant already switched owners. The new boss obviously needs to pay a new protection fee! This year's protection fee isn't that much, just a million dollars! We will leave after collecting the money, moreover, after taking that money, we promise that you guys won't receive any disturbances."

When Ge Pu heard this, his eyes immediately widened. "One million dollars? In the past, wasn't it always five hundred thousand?"

The blonde male spoke with a dark tone, "Heng, a super idiot spent ten million dollars to buy this restaurant. Do you think that we don't know this? If we don't milk such a big cash cow, who would we milk?"

When Li Yang heard Ge Pu's words, his brows immediately furrowed. "You're not only asking us to pay twice? You still want me to pay double, it seems like you really think that I am some cash cow." After thinking about it for a bit, Li Yang's eyes shot towards that group of people. The corners of his lips carried a hint of a cold smile.

Book 2 Chapter 15.2 – Master Bo

"You guys can leave. The protection fee has been paid once already, and I, Mu Yi will never pay it a second time. As for Taibai Restaurant's future protection fees..." When Li Yang spoke up to this point, he abruptly stopped. His eyes fell on the blonde male whose expression hadn't changed and softly said, "There also won't be any!"

When the blonde male heard these words, he wasn't surprised in the least. He only lowered his head to look at the golden ring on his finger before saying calmly, "Mu Yi, new entertainer within the Underground Boxing Arena. With a sweeping might, you rushed into the top division competition. It is highly likely that your strength is not lower than Devil King's, and can be considered a fourth-ranked expert!" The blonde male slowly raised his head and inquired in a gentlemanly fashion, "I wonder if Boss Mu Yi agrees with what I said?"

Li Yang's eyes slightly shrunk and looked over the blonde male again. This time, he truly became a bit more attentive inside.

He only knew that the Gunman Organization was one of New York's two large organizations that proclaimed themselves as New York's leaders.

"Here in New York, there are countless underground experts. Those whose skills have reached the fourth rank are as common as the hairs on an ox. The number of experts who have reached fifth rank are not few as well, so for the Gunman Organization to thrive within New York, there must be something backing up their confidence. If I truly was an ordinary fourth rank expert, then I really wouldn't dare to fight back. Actually, even if I was barely an ordinary fifth rank expert, I still would not argue with him. However, not only am I not an ordinary fourth rank expert, I'm also not some ordinary fifth rank expert. With the Evasion Technique, killing the head of the the Gunman Organization is not difficult. With their boss dead, I believe that they won't have the time to defeat my small restaurant anymore, right?" Li Yang thought this inwardly, and a mysterious smile appeared on his face. As a result, the blonde male began to guess inwardly.

The blonde male looked at Li Yang and thought things through. "En, my Gunman Organization possesses a large amount of firepower. Even though fourth rank experts are a thousand times more powerful than ordinary people, I brought with me the brand new Desert Eagle model that has an astonishing penetrative power. This brand new Desert Eagle's penetrative force is something that even top division fourth division experts can't block. I believe that Mu Yi also understand what is good and bad." Thinking up to this point, the blonde male's confidence rose. He slowly poured himself some tea before raising up the cup in a composed manner

"En, the Gunman Organization has offended quite a few people, so among the assassination missions, there definitely has to be a few targeted at their boss. After accepting that mission and killing that boss, not only will I gain some money, I can also throw the Gunman Organization's interior into absolute chaos, leaving them with no time to deal with this small restaurant of mine; it really is killing two birds with

one stone!" When Li Yang thought up to this point, he turned towards the blond male and said, "One cup of tea is a thousand dollars! I believe that mister is not someone who does not pay his tab."

When the blonde male heard this, he almost spat out the tea within his mouth.

One cup of tea, one thousand dollars. This was simply robbing money!"

The blonde male's face gradually became cold as he slowly put down the tea cup. He raised his head and fixed his eyes on Li Yang as he said, "Mister Mu Yi, have you already made your decision? You want to make our Gunman Organization your enemy?"

Li Yang nodded his head slightly, and did not say a single sentence.

"It seems like Mister Mu Yi still does not understand our Gunman Organization's true power. Fellow brothers, why don't we give them a taste of our strength!" The blonde male faintly smiled as he spoke. He believed that once Mu Yi saw their new Desert Queens, he definitely wouldn't fight back any more.

The clothes of the men in black behind the blonde male fluttered, revealing the Desert Eagles below.

What kind of person is Li Yang? In the past, he was an elite within the special forces, so how could he not know about the new Desert Eagle? The new Desert Eagle's penetrative force was powerful, and it was likely that only fifth rank experts could withstand it. If it was a fourth rank

expert that encountered this weapon, then they would definitely be penetrated. Compared to the old Desert Eagle model, the new Desert Eagle Model not only increased in penetrative force, it also increased the number of bullets that could be stored within. The recoil has also been reduced, and was absolutely a perfect assassination firearm.

"I wonder if Mister Mu Yi decided to change his mind now? Right, how much is this cup of tea now? One dollar should be enough right?" The blonde male had an extremely bright smile on his face.

Li Yang replied, "One dollar? No, no, of course that's not enough. The price of this tea has changed. Now, the price is, ten thousand dollars! I believe that ten thousand is still something that the Gunman Organization can still take out!"

Hearing 'ten thousand dollars,' the blond male's face sunk. He said in a dull voice, "Go!"

Hu!

A whirlwind swept past, and this group of large men from the Gunman Organization looked foolishly at their hands. They were hands that were no longer holding guns!

As if he was disposing of trash, Li Yang threw the ten or so guns towards the table on the side.

Li Yang actually seized all the guns from those ten individuals in a mere second!

These people immediately became foolish. The blonde male's complexion also changed greatly. He knew that the Underground Boxing Arena's physical bodies were powerful and that their speeds were extremely fast, but he never would have thought that a fourth rank expert could reach this level.

Li Yang truly paid no attention to them. After cultivating the 'Piercing Clouds and Moving Mists,' Li Yang's speed was not merely this little bit. Just now, he still held back quite a bit!

"Good, good, good! I believe what Mister Mu Yi used was precisely the legendary 'movement technique' from the ancient east!" The blonde male's face once again recovered its calmness. This time, he miscalculated. According to his estimations, it was impossible for a fourth rank expert to seize the weapons from so many men. He could only use the 'movement technique' as an explanation.

Li Yang nodded his head.

"Good, since Mister Mu Yi has this much strength, claiming to not need our protection is still normal. I believe that Mister Mu Yi can protect his own restaurant. We can go, however, can you return those guns to us? Otherwise, it will be difficult for us to explain when we get back." The blonde male seemed a bit 'bashful' as he spoke out this request.

"Of course I can, however, you have to leave behind the bullets. I'm worried that mister will turn around and fire a round at me!" Li Yang laughed, and quickly removed the bullets with proficiency. The blonde male's expression immediately changed. He could tell from Li Yang's

movements just now that he was definitely an expert that played with guns before.

The blonde male immediately made a hint towards a younger comrade at his side. That younger individual immediately walked up and retrieved the guns.

"I give my wishes towards Mister Mu Yi's protection of his own restaurant. Right, I need to remind mister, there are still quite a few ruffians and rogues around!" The blonde male gave Mu Yi a meaningful look before leading his people out just like that.

Li Yang actually furrowed his brows. Shortly after, he smiled. "Don't force me, otherwise, it wouldn't be good if I kill your boss."

After going through this disturbance, Li Yang didn't want to return any more and sat down within the restaurant. He asked for a few bottles of Erguotou and side dishes.

"Big bro Ge Pu, where is that old man that used to play the flute?" There was an old flute player that did not want any from from Ge Pu. Every day, he only wanted a few bottles of wine and side dishes.

Ge Pu laughed and said, "Old Wang already returned. When the Gunman Organization's men came just now, all the customers left." Li Yang nodded his head and asked, "I wonder if there is a bamboo flute here?"

When Ge Pu heard this, he immediately smiled. "There is, of course there is one here. In our Taibai Restaurant, we most likely have all the ancient instruments. Wait a bit, I'll get it for you!"

Bamboo flute... Back when Li Yang was in the armed forces, this was Li Yang's only hobby during his leisure time. Playing the bamboo flute was something that a veteran taught him. Even though his skill could not be compared to a flute playing expert, it was good enough, and was not bad as a type of self amusement.

Receiving the bamboo flute that Ge Pu brought, Li Yang immediately thought of the 'Liang Zhu.' This was the 'Liang Zhu' inside the music box Jiang Xue gifted Li Yang.

TL: Liang Zhu refers to a pair of lovers in folk legend

Li Yang couldn't hold himself back from recalling his time together with Jiang Xue. He couldn't help but remember the trivial conversations every night on the phone. Li Yang's face gradually developed a smile, and couldn't help but play 'Liang Zhu.' The flute sound carried a hidden bitterness as it resonated within the entire restaurant. Currently, there were no customers within the restaurant.

"The sash on my clothes widen but I don't regret, for you who is no longer here I am wan and sallow." While playing the instrument, Li Yang involuntarily began to cry. A sparkling teardrop fell onto the ground. With a peng, it shattered, splashing outwards.

At this moment, an elderly man wearing a green chinese tunic suit

walked into the restaurant. As soon as the elder saw the flute playing Li Yang, his eyes immediately lit up. "As expected, it truly is the same as the one in the spiritual awareness, exactly the same as young disciple in his earlier years!"

Book 2 Chapter 16.1 – Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes

Li Yang continued to immerse himself in his memories, closing his eyes as he played the flute...

"Going forward silently, to share a cup with him. Hidden within the clear water lies deep emotions, and from it drunken love. Be it good or bad affinity, even without the dream of butterflies, I'll return to you in this lifetime. Be it life past or present, the pair flies through many lifetimes."

TL: Thanks to Raynor for making sense of this

The song 'Butterfly lovers' was played through the flute, and the music filled up the interior of the Taibai Restaurant. The deep yearning of the flute music carried with it a wave of emotion, making those who heard it want to shed tears.

The green-robed elder listened. He slowly walking over, arriving at a table nearby Li Yang before sitting down. As if he also began to reminisce, the elder sat there like so as Li Yang played with his eyes closed.

Ge Pu slowly walked towards the green-robed elder before sitting down near him. Watching Li Yang, he sighed and said, "Brother Mu Yi usual puts on such a cold and unyielding character. Who knew he would also be such a heartbroken person!"

"Be it life past or present, the pair flies through many lifetimes. The road of cultivation is endless and remote. The heavenly tribulation is a

terrifying display of heaven's might. To successfully undergo tribulation is difficult enough, yet even after passing the tribulation, no one knows whether the road to the Ghost Realm will be peaceful. I truly don't know how many months and years it will take before I can see Xue again ah!" Li Yang lamented within his heart. He slowly put away the flute, and when he opened his eyes, he noticed that tears had already flowed down into his bosom. He couldn't help but shake his head. As if he didn't mind it at all, he laughed, but his smile became even more bleak.

"Which cultivation realm have you reached already within the Three Great Heavenly Realms?" Suddenly, an aged voice sounded from beside Li Yang's ear.

Without thinking, Li Yang replied, "Despair boundary." After replying, Li Yang was immediately alarmed, and his eyes shot towards the green-robed elder beside him. The 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' was a rare text that only he, Li Shuo, and their mother knew about. How could anyone else know about this?

"Who are you?" Internal qi immediately surged from within Li Yang's body, locking in the elder in front of him.

Expert, an exceptional expert! This was Li Yang's immediate reaction.

"Mid-stage Nascent Soul level expert! However, he shouldn't have any ill intentions. If he wanted to deal with you, he would have done so already. Moreover, there is an excessively terrifying wave of oppressing blade qi around his body. You probably won't even be able to take a single strike from him, so just relax for now. Being so alert is also rather pointless, but since I am here, Overlord won't allow anything to happen to you!" After hearing Xiang Yu's voice, the muscles in Li Yang's body

began to relax.

"Right now, you don't need to ask who I am, you only have to tell me whether or not your surname is Li. Don't worry, I have already placed restrictions in the surroundings, so no one will hear our discussion." The green-robed elder did not mind Li Yang's reaction at all.

"It is!" Li Yang nodded.

The green-robed elder's eyes immediately lit up, because Li Yang's qi completely returned to normal. The qi was no longer prepared to attack at a moment's notice like before.

"Is your father called Li Fengshu?" The green-robed elder continued.

At this moment, Li Yang's mind immediately became utterly chaotic. He and his brother never saw their father before, and based on what their mother said, their father wasn't even aware of their existence. Their mother becoming a workaholic was also related to their father, later on going to a mountain village to live alone.

However, Li Yang did indeed know his father's name, and it was precisely — Li Fengshu. He immediately looked at the green-robed elder and nodded his head.

The green-robed elder began to laugh. "It really was my junior disciple Fengshu's child! No wonder you look so much like my junior brother Fengshu when he was young

"You know my father?" Li Yang heart immediately began to shake. As a son who never met his father, how could he not be shocked to suddenly receive news related to his father?

The green-robed elder nodded his head and said, "Correct, your father and I were fellow apprentices." Suddenly, the green-robed elder sighed. "Seems like you were also deeply emotionally wounded before you reached the Despair Boundary. This 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' ah! It really is the cause of my Great Heavenly School's ruin!"

Li Yang's heart was shaking incessantly. After hearing the 'Great Heavenly School', his mind began to make connections. "Since he is fellow apprentices with my father, then my father should also be a member of the Great Heavenly School. However, why is this 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' the root of the Great Heavenly School's troubles?"

"Great Heavenly School? That is my father's sect, right? Why is the 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' the cause of its ruin?" Li Yang asked quickly and urgently.

When the green-robed elder heard this, he sighed and said, "The Great Heavenly School is one of the truth cultivation schools within the Kunlun Paradise. Your father and I were disciples of the same generation within the Great Heavenly School. However, your father's status was different than mine! He was the son of the school master. As for this 'Three Great Heavenly Realms', heng heng, if it wasn't for this 'Three Great Heavenly Realms', you would most likely be cultivating within the Great Heavenly School right now."

When Li Yang heard this, he immediately furrowed his brows in suspicion.

The green-robed elder looked at his grizzled hair and sighed before saying, "The 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' is the rare text that the master ancestor used in the past to enter the dao through emotions. Using one's emotions to enter the dao allows one to comprehend things more naturally, and absorb the heaven and earth's spiritual essence at a faster speed. Other schools' disciples need hundreds of years to pass tribulations, yet my Great Heavenly School needs less than two hundred. There is one crucial thing, however, and that is that one has to realize the three great realms. What this means is that for every disciple, there must be a girl to feel pain and grief over. Every single Great Heavenly School disciple has to leave and find love. After falling in love, they must abandon the woman and return to the Great Heavenly School. By facing such suffering within their souls, they will realize the Remorse Boundary, and soon after the Despair Boundary."

The green-robed elder bitterly laughed and said, "Within the Great Heavenly School, as long as you can realize the Despair Boundary, you can leave the Kunlun land once again to find your past love, bringing her back to the school with you. However, only the Remorse Boundary is easy to attain; the Despair Boundary is extremely difficult. Many disciples can't attain it after several tens of years, and at that time, their loved once have already aged. Even if some of the disciples reached it relatively fast, those girls were all heartbroken after being abandoned. To find them again in the boundless ocean of people is an extremely difficult task."

When Li Yang heard this, his expression instantly changed greatly.

He never would have thought that the Great Heavenly School would have this type of cultivation method. Using wounded emotion as a way of cultivation; it truly made the two lovers' feelings undergo torture.

His own mother was probably another one of these unfortunate individuals. As for his father, it was likely that he was still suffering this type of emotional tormenting while trying to attain the Despair Boundary so that he could find his mother.

"Haha, hilarious, too funny! These Great Heavenly School disciples all want to 'reach the Despair Boundary' and find their loved ones. With this kind of mindset, how could they possibly reach the despair boundary? Having this type of expectation and hope, yet they still want to attain the despair boundary, what a joke! Haha... To only cultivate for a few dozen years, maybe they can only awaken after they develop despair from never reaching this boundary!" Xiang Yu disdainfully spoke within Li Yang's mind.

When Li Yang heard this, he immediately trembled. He himself reached it so fast, so he believed that the aptitude of the school's disciples wouldn't be that low. However, it seems like it truly was like how Xiang Yu described it, because all of the Great Heavenly School's disciples still had hope. Hope that they could reach the Despair Boundary, and hope that they could find their loved one afterwards. Having these expectations, they still want to understand despair, that truly was a joke.

"I won't say any more, let's stop here!" The green-robed elder suddenly shook his head.

The green-robed elder looked at Li Yang. "The Three Great Heavenly Realms is not a cultivation method for the mind, but rather a cultivation for training oneself. Since you are my junior disciple Fengshu's child, you can also be considered my Great Heavenly School's disciple. I will pass onto you my Great Heavenly School's Flying Dagger way in the dao, the cultivation sacred canon — 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes'!"

Book 2 Chapter 16.2 – Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes

Li Yang continued to immerse himself in his memories, closing his eyes as he played the flute...

"Going forward silently, to share a cup with him. Hidden within the clear water lies deep emotions, and from it drunken love. Be it good or bad affinity, even without the dream of butterflies, I'll return to you in this lifetime. Be it life past or present, the pair flies through many lifetimes."

TL: Thanks to Raynor for making sense of this

The song 'Butterfly lovers' was played through the flute, and the music filled up the interior of the Taibai Restaurant. The deep yearning of the flute music carried with it a wave of emotion, making those who heard it want to shed tears.

The green-robed elder listened. He slowly walking over, arriving at a table nearby Li Yang before sitting down. As if he also began to reminisce, the elder sat there like so as Li Yang played with his eyes closed.

Ge Pu slowly walked towards the green-robed elder before sitting down near him. Watching Li Yang, he sighed and said, "Brother Mu Yi usual puts on such a cold and unyielding character. Who knew he would also be such a heartbroken person!"

"Be it life past or present, the pair flies through many lifetimes. The road of cultivation is endless and remote. The heavenly tribulation is a terrifying display of heaven's might. To successfully undergo tribulation is difficult enough, yet even after passing the tribulation, no one knows whether the road to the Ghost Realm will be peaceful. I truly don't know how many months and years it will take before I can see Xue again ah!" Li Yang lamented within his heart. He slowly put away the flute, and when he opened his eyes, he noticed that tears had already flowed down into his bosom. He couldn't help but shake his head. As if he didn't mind it at all, he laughed, but his smile became even more bleak.

"Which cultivation realm have you reached already within the Three Great Heavenly Realms?" Suddenly, an aged voice sounded from beside Li Yang's ear.

Without thinking, Li Yang replied, "Despair boundary." After replying, Li Yang was immediately alarmed, and his eyes shot towards the green-robed elder beside him. The 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' was a rare text that only he, Li Shuo, and their mother knew about. How could anyone else know about this?

"Who are you?" Internal qi immediately surged from within Li Yang's body, locking in the elder in front of him.

Expert, an exceptional expert! This was Li Yang's immediate reaction.

"Mid-stage Nascent Soul level expert! However, he shouldn't have any ill intentions. If he wanted to deal with you, he would have done so already. Moreover, there is an excessively terrifying wave of oppressing blade qi around his body. You probably won't even be able to take a single strike from him, so just relax for now. Being so alert is also rather

pointless, but since I am here, Overlord won't allow anything to happen to you!" After hearing Xiang Yu's voice, the muscles in Li Yang's body began to relax.

"Right now, you don't need to ask who I am, you only have to tell me whether or not your surname is Li. Don't worry, I have already placed restrictions in the surroundings, so no one will hear our discussion." The green-robed elder did not mind Li Yang's reaction at all.

"It is!" Li Yang nodded.

The green-robed elder's eyes immediately lit up, because Li Yang's qi completely returned to normal. The qi was no longer prepared to attack at a moment's notice like before.

"Is your father called Li Fengshu?" The green-robed elder continued.

At this moment, Li Yang's mind immediately became utterly chaotic. He and his brother never saw their father before, and based on what their mother said, their father wasn't even aware of their existence. Their mother becoming a workaholic was also related to their father, later on going to a mountain village to live alone.

However, Li Yang did indeed know his father's name, and it was precisely — Li Fengshu. He immediately looked at the green-robed elder and nodded his head.

The green-robed elder began to laugh. "It really was my junior disciple Fengshu's child! No wonder you look so much like my junior brother

Fengshu when he was young

"You know my father?" Li Yang heart immediately began to shake. As a son who never met his father, how could he not be shocked to suddenly receive news related to his father?

The green-robed elder nodded his head and said, "Correct, your father and I were fellow apprentices." Suddenly, the green-robed elder sighed. "Seems like you were also deeply emotionally wounded before you reached the Despair Boundary. This 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' ah! It really is the cause of my Great Heavenly School's ruin!"

Li Yang's heart was shaking incessantly. After hearing the 'Great Heavenly School', his mind began to make connections. "Since he is fellow apprentices with my father, then my father should also be a member of the Great Heavenly School. However, why is this 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' the root of the Great Heavenly School's troubles?"

"Great Heavenly School? That is my father's sect, right? Why is the 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' the cause of its ruin?" Li Yang asked quickly and urgently.

When the green-robed elder heard this, he sighed and said, "The Great Heavenly School is one of the truth cultivation schools within the Kunlun Paradise. Your father and I were disciples of the same generation within the Great Heavenly School. However, your father's status was different than mine! He was the son of the school master. As for this 'Three Great Heavenly Realms', heng heng, if it wasn't for this 'Three Great Heavenly Realms', you would most likely be cultivating within the Great Heavenly School right now."

When Li Yang heard this, he immediately furrowed his brows in suspicion.

The green-robed elder looked at his grizzled hair and sighed before saying, "The 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' is the rare text that the master ancestor used in the past to enter the dao through emotions. Using one's emotions to enter the dao allows one to comprehend things more naturally, and absorb the heaven and earth's spiritual essence at a faster speed. Other schools' disciples need hundreds of years to pass tribulations, yet my Great Heavenly School needs less than two hundred. There is one crucial thing, however, and that is that one has to realize the three great realms. What this means is that for every disciple, there must be a girl to feel pain and grief over. Every single Great Heavenly School disciple has to leave and find love. After falling in love, they must abandon the woman and return to the Great Heavenly School. By facing such suffering within their souls, they will realize the Remorse Boundary, and soon after the Despair Boundary."

The green-robed elder bitterly laughed and said, "Within the Great Heavenly School, as long as you can realize the Despair Boundary, you can leave the Kunlun land once again to find your past love, bringing her back to the school with you. However, only the Remorse Boundary is easy to attain; the Despair Boundary is extremely difficult. Many disciples can't attain it after several tens of years, and at that time, their loved once have already aged. Even if some of the disciples reached it relatively fast, those girls were all heartbroken after being abandoned. To find them again in the boundless ocean of people is an extremely difficult task."

When Li Yang heard this, his expression instantly changed greatly.

He never would have thought that the Great Heavenly School would have this type of cultivation method. Using wounded emotion as a way of cultivation; it truly made the two lovers' feelings undergo torture.

His own mother was probably another one of these unfortunate individuals. As for his father, it was likely that he was still suffering this type of emotional tormenting while trying to attain the Despair Boundary so that he could find his mother.

"Haha, hilarious, too funny! These Great Heavenly School disciples all want to 'reach the Despair Boundary' and find their loved ones. With this kind of mindset, how could they possibly reach the despair boundary? Having this type of expectation and hope, yet they still want to attain the despair boundary, what a joke! Haha... To only cultivate for a few dozen years, maybe they can only awaken after they develop despair from never reaching this boundary!" Xiang Yu disdainfully spoke within Li Yang's mind.

When Li Yang heard this, he immediately trembled. He himself reached it so fast, so he believed that the aptitude of the school's disciples wouldn't be that low. However, it seems like it truly was like how Xiang Yu described it, because all of the Great Heavenly School's disciples still had hope. Hope that they could reach the Despair Boundary, and hope that they could find their loved one afterwards. Having these expectations, they still want to understand despair, that truly was a joke.

"I won't say any more, let's stop here!" The green-robed elder suddenly shook his head.

The green-robed elder looked at Li Yang. "The Three Great Heavenly Realms is not a cultivation method for the mind, but rather a cultivation

for training oneself. Since you are my junior disciple Fengshu's child, you can also be considered my Great Heavenly School's disciple. I will pass onto you my Great Heavenly School's Flying Dagger way in the dao, the cultivation sacred canon — 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes'!

Part 2

"Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes'? Using the flying dagger as a sacred canon to cultivate the dao?" Li Yang's heard was greatly shaken. He didn't know whether to feel shocked or happy.

Xiang Yu began to holler, "Haha, Flying Dagger to enter the dao! In the Immortal Realm, there is only Sword Immortals and ordinary people. I have never heard of someone who used the way of flying daggers to become a daoist immortal. I wonder what would happen once this new school of thought is established? Li Yang ah, learn quickly! Overlord will definitely carefully listen. Who knows, I might be able to gain some enlightenment!"

Li Yang restrained his mind and calmed down his excited mood. Towards the green-robed elder, he said, "Teacher, is this 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' then the rare text for one to cultivate in the way of Flying Daggers? Is it the one that my Great Heavenly School ancestral master passed down?"

The green-robed elder was proud as he spoke. "Of course! My Great Heavenly School's ancestral master Daoist Xunhuan had a heaven warping natural aptitude, establishing this way of the Flying Dagger truth cultivation manual — 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes'. Taking the entire Kunlun Paradise's great truth cultivator schools into consideration, there isn't a single school whose attack method is comparable to our Great Heavenly School's. Back then, do you know how universally shocking it was when Daoist Xunhuan faced tribulation?"

When Li Yang heard this, he immediately asked, "Tribulation?"

The green-robed elder continued, "When a cultivator faces tribulation, they will usually be hacked by lightning until their souls disperse. A portion will become loose immortals, and only a small number truly pass tribulation successfully. Normally, passing tribulation is already something to be proud of, but during that year when Daoist Xunhuan faced tribulation, it was the most shocking event in the history of the Kunlun Paradise!"

"Most shocking event?" Li Yang was incredibly curious.

The green-robed man's face possessed a hint of pride. "Of course! During that year, Daoist Xunhuan was lying down on top of a cloud while enjoying some wine. When the heavenly tribulation came, the sky became muddled and the earth became dark. The region where Daoist Xunhuan was at had even more chaotic energies accumulated, yet Daoist Xunhuan seemed like he didn't care at all."

"Suddenly, Daoist Xunhuan raised up his arm to sip some wine before lifting his head to coldly shout. Immediately, blade radiance flickered outwards, and the heaven and earth seemed to have darkened. In that instant, the cultivators from the Kunlun Paradise who came to watch the tribulation were all shocked to find that the 'tribulation cloud' was actually hacked apart in one slice by Daoist Xunhuan! Later on, even though it gathered together once again, its power was greatly diminished. When the nine weakened streaks of heavenly lightning struck down, it didn't even break through the sword radiance surrounding Daoist Xunhuan's body!"

"Streak after streak of weakened lightning blasted down, and Daoist

Xunhuan merely used the blade radiance around his body to defend against those nine streaks of heavenly lightning. From start to finish, Daoist Xunhuan did not use any artifacts, and the white clothes he wore did not receive the slightest bit of damage. It was to the point where after the tribulation, Daoist Xunhuan continued to casually lie down on the cloud and sip on wine! From the beginning, Daoist Xunhuan didn't even worry about his heavenly tribulation!"

The green-robed elder continued to speak, and his face was one of yearning and adoration.

The more Li Yang listened, the more he became at a loss. It was as if he could personally see Daoist Xunhuan going through tribulation. He could see his attitude being 'no matter how powerful this heavenly tribulation is, I'll just here and drink my wine'. With a single slash, the tribulation cloud dispersed! The heavenly lightning struck down on his body, but not even the blade radiance covering his body was broken through. The attitude of not being concerned about tribulation immediately appeared in Li Yang's mind, and he felt an involuntary surge of adoration.

"Powerful, powerful... Truly formidable, too formidable! Actually hacking apart the tribulation cloud with a single slice, this... This attack power is too terrifying, simply too terrifying! Back then when Overlord faced tribulation, even though it went rather smoothly, in the end, there were several life saving treasures that were hacked to pieces by the lightning. As for the tribulation cloud, at that time, I did not have the strength to blast apart that cloud! Seems like this way of the flying dagger truly is formidable!" Xiang Yu sighed with deep feelings.

The green-robed elder suddenly laughed. "Haha, after chatting so much with you, I still haven't even told you what this master's name is! My surname is Wang, so calling me master Wang will do!"

The green-robed elder's name was Wang Tong, and was a disciple of the same generation as Li Yang's father. Later on, because of a disagreement with his master regarding the 'Three Great Heavenly Realms', he left the Great Heavenly School and entered the Green Mercenaries. After several tens of years of effort, he helped raise the Green Mercenaries' strength greatly. Currently, his status within the Green Mercenaries was extremely high, and there was no one who could compare to him.

"Master Wang, regarding the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' you were talking about just now, how exactly does one go about cultivating it?" Li Yang was somewhat shocked as he spoke. He was already somewhat impatient to learn the "Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes".

When Wang Tong heard Li Yang's words, he immediately released a straightforward laugh. He completely understood what Li Yang was feeling so he did not make any more detours. "Alright! Wait for a bit!" While speaking, Wang Tong took out a precious and crystalline piece of jade. The true primordial energy within his hands immediately surged, and Wang Tong began to concentrate as he recorded all of the contents of the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' within.

Soon after, a smiling expression appeared on Wang Tong's face, and he handed over the jade strip to Li Yang. "Disciple, the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' are recorded within this jade strip. Within, there is also the 'Luminous Clear Secret'. This 'Luminous Clear Secret' is the cultivation method to become an immortal. Master did not explain to you properly just now. Even though this 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' is a rare text for the dao of flying daggers, it is impossible to become an immortal purely through the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes'.

Li Yang became distracted, and couldn't help but feel confused.

Wang Tong immediate explained, "This 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' is a way to transform true primordial force into a soul blade cultivation technique. That's why our Great Heavenly School disciples must all cultivate the 'Luminous Clear Secret' to produce true primordial force, and then depend on the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' to cultivate the soul blade.

Li Yang still did not understand, but Xiang Yu did. Xiang Yu immediately laughed loudly within Li Yang's mind. "Haha... Formidable, formidable! This 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' is originally quite like the 'Demonic God's Six Extremes', only that it is a step further in addition to the 'Demonic God's Six Extremes'. The 'Demonic God's Six Extremes' allows one's attacks to conform with the heavenly law to increase the attack power! Meanwhile, this 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extreme' directly allows true primordial force to undergo change within one's body, turning into a attack power that is ten, or even a hundred times the power."

"If you don't understand, then just carefully read the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes'. It is explained in detail there. Right, you already reached the Xiantian Paragon stage, and can control your mind. As long as your mind enters the jade slip, you'll be able to read it." Wang Tong explained the usage of the jade slip.

Li Yang immediately controlled his mind to enter the jade slip.

"Shatter the golden dan, forming the great heavenly body! The golden dan will form the seven heavenly extremes, creating the form of the heavenly world. It will form the seven brilliant heavenly bodies and draw force from within them, refining out a strand of powerful blade radiance.

Under the flames of the heavenly bodies, the blade radiance will become even more condensed. After many years, the countless true primordial force will gather and the blade radiance will become even more condensed. Once it reaches the pinnacle, it can immediately take on the form of a flying dagger and become a real flying dagger. That is the soul blade, and it can be compared to a truth cultivator's nascent soul..."

An hour later, Li Yang's mind returned. He sighed inwardly. "Formidable, who dares to shatter a golden dan while it is still forming? Once the golden dan is shattered, it will turn into seven fragments. These fragments will become the heavenly bodies, and those seven bodies will revolve like the heavenly world. One's energy will be completely exhausted, all for the sake of refining a thread of blade radiance. In addition, the heavenly bodies are similar to a golden dan, as while the golden dan has dan flame, the heavenly bodies have heavenly flames. The heavenly flames will also continuously purify that blade radiance, and the true primordial force absorbed by the heavenly bodies will be refined into blade radiance. Countless energy will be gathered, and it will be continuously refined. Just how terrifying is the offensive power of this blade radiance?" Li Yang felt his heart tremble.

Xiang Yu immediately sighed in admiration. "Powerful ah! In addition, the blade radiance can be refined into a material object, becoming the soul blade. This type of soul blade's sturdiness will most likely be comparable to immortal weapons, and with the soul being within the 'soul blade', the safety of it will definitely far surpass that of a weak nascent soul. Formidable, truly formidable!"

Xiang Yu suddenly yelled, "Li Yang, you are simply too lucky! In the future, your energy will refine a 'soul blade'. Its offensive power will already be frightening, but if you also add the insights of the 'Demon God's Six Extremes', allowing your attacks to conform to the heavenly

laws as well, then the power of your attacks will be..."

After hearing Xiang Yu's words, a smile appeared on Li Yang's face.

Book 2 Chapter 17.1 – Accepting Disciple

“Right, martial nephew, isn’t your surname Li? Why did you change your name and enter the Underground Boxing Arena as ‘Mu Yi’?” Only now did Wang Tong remember to ask this.

Li Yang immediately replied, “Master Wang, my original name is Li Yang. You can just think of this ‘Mu Yi’ as my other name!” When Li Yang said the name ‘Mu Yi’, he immediately thought of Jiang Xue who used to shout ‘big brother Mu Yi’ all day. He couldn’t help but reveal a bleak expression, however, Li Yang immediately hid away those emotions. Facing Wang Tong, he continued, “As for why I changed my name to ‘Mu Yi’ and for why I came to the Underground Boxing Arena, I will have to bring up the Holy Forest Group.”

“Forget it, let’s not talk about the past. Master does not need to worry about disciple’s small matters.” It was clear that Li Yang did not want to talk about old matters anymore.

When Wang Tong heard Li Yang play the ‘Butterfly Lovers’ song, he already knew that his disciple was deeply emotionally wounded. Moreover, the fact that he was able to realize the Three Great Heavenly Realms meant that his temperament was greatly affected. Wang Tong knew that these things were better off not asking about, and so he immediately decided not to further pursue the topic any further.

Wang Tong smiled and said, “Disciple, how do you feel about the ‘Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes?’

When Li Yang heard this, the adoration he kept within his heart for his

grandfather Li Xunhuan couldn't be suppressed. He excitedly said, "Ancestor Daoist Xunhuan is a heaven warping genius. This 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' is definitely an incredibly amazing sacred canon. Just the 'shatter the golden dan to create heavenly bodies' alone makes me admire him endlessly. Countless cultivators consider themselves truth cultivators after reaching the Golden Dan stage, so how many of them would actually dare to shatter that Golden Dan? Moreover, perfecting the blade radiance is a tedious task, and making the seven astral bodies follow the trajectory of the heavenly world is also exceedingly difficult. There are simply too many possible routes! I truly cannot imagine exactly how martial grandfather created such a thing."

"Truly! Martial Grandfather's way of thinking is not something us disciples can conceive." Wang Tong's voice was full of reverence towards his ancestral master.

TL: Ancestral master or grandfather refers to Li Xunhuan

Li Yang suddenly furrowed his brows. "Right, this 'Seven Astral Heavenly Bodies' requires one to be at the Golden Dan stage to cultivate. Currently, I am only at the Xiantian Paragon stage, and a considerable distance away from reaching the Golden Dan stage. How can I cultivate this 'Seven Astral Heavenly Realms' then?" To have the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' yet no way to cultivate it made Li Yang feel somewhat depressed.

Wang Tong began to laugh heartily on the spot. "Disciple, you don't need to worry. The most important part of this 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' is the method of refining the true primordial force into blade radiance. In fact, our ancestral grandfather already reached the Golden Dan stage, and naturally did not know that a Xiantian expert could already cultivate this portion. The only difference is that a Xiantian expert

can only use Xiantian qi, so the refined blade radiance will be lower quality in power."

When Li Yang heard this, a smile immediately appeared on his face.

"Li Yang, you foolish youngster. Overlord could tell with a glance that this 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' could be cultivated while still in the Xiantian stage. This blade radiance refining technique is amazing after all, and that whatever Li Xunhuan guy is pretty formidable." To Xiang Yu, who was a devil king within the Devil Realm, Li Xunhuan was definitely someone from the younger generation. However, he still felt admiration towards Li Xunhuan.

"Right, martial nephew, this 'Seven Astral Heavenly Realms' is divided into seven stages. The first stage is equivalent to the Golden Dan stage, the second Nascent Soul stage, the third Tribulation stage, and the fourth the Supreme stage. As for the three stages after that, based on my ancestral grandfather's suspicions, it should be comparable to the Immortal Realm's Immortal, Celestial Immortal, and Golden Immortal stages. However, that is only what the ancestral grandfather thinks, because the last three stages are useless within the Mortal Realm. As a result, only disciples that passed tribulation within the Great Heavenly Schol are allowed to find out about this. Master merely knows the first four stages of the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes', and what I passed on to you were those four stages. As for the last three stages, it's better if you study it when you return to the Great Heavenly School in the future!" Wang Tong told Li Yang.

When Li Yang heard this, he couldn't help but become confused. "How could ancestral grandfather know about Immortals, Celestial Immortals, and Golden Immortals? Could it be that there are immortals that came into the Mortal Realm?"

When Wang Tong heard this, even though there was a restriction set up, he still spoke in a softer voice. "Disciple, immortals have indeed entered the Mortal Realm in the past. Rumor has it that the two most powerful schools within the Kunlun Paradise, 'Upper Clear Palace' and 'Shushan Sword School', are hosting immortals. The cultivation stages of immortals were also slowly leaked out from there."

Suddenly, Wang Tong sighed. "Ai, it was for the Great Heavenly School that master allowed disciples to cultivate the 'Three Great Heavenly Realms'. Our Great Heavenly School's disciples are few, and our foundation is shallow. Other schools have been established for over ten thousand years, and even the short ones have a few thousand years of history. In addition, they even have older generations within the Immortal Realm helping them out from behind the scenes! Only my Great Heavenly School has a measly couple hundred years of history, and not really any older generation within the Immortal Realm to help us. Our master could only let us cultivate the 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' to increase our cultivation speed and allow our Great Heavenly School to increase in experts. Only by doing this did our school avoid being humiliated by other schools."

After hearing this, Li Yang began to understand the Great Heavenly School's situation within the Kunlun Paradise.

The Great Heavenly School disiciple's offensive power was high, but their disciples were few in number. They could only depend on the 'Three Great Heavenly Realms' to increase their cultivation speed, allowing their Great Heavenly School to have more disciples and have some status within the Kunlun Paradise.

"En, you should go back and cultivate for now. After a short period of time, I will look for you. Don't worry about when I will contact you, haha, as long as you are in New York, I can use my spiritual awareness to find you." While speaking, Wang Tong was about to turn around to leave. Li Yang immediately got up to send him off.

Only when Wang Tong left Taibai Restaurant did Ge Pu walk over and ask Li Yang, "Brother Mu Yi, that older man is an acquaintance of yours?"

Li Yang nodded and said, "He is an senior teacher of mine."

...

After receiving the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes', Li Yang immediately returned to his villa to cultivate.

However, when Li Yang arrived outside his villa, he encountered the... Lovey dove Tian Gang and Lily. Lily was currently sending off Tian Gang, and after spending two hours 'interacting' with each other, the previously already interested Tian Gang's defenses were finally shattered by miss Lily.

"Ah, Mu Yi!" Tian Gang's face immediately became thoroughly red. Such a big muscular man acting like this truly was rather embarrassing. Meanwhile, Miss Lily didn't have the appearance of a housekeeper either, and looked like someone whose affair had just been revealed.

"Haha... Tian Gang ah, your movements are truly fast, capturing Miss Lily's heart in one go, admirable, admirable!" Li Yang laughed as he spoke

and immediately said, "You guys continue, I'll go back first!"

Li Yang left the embarrassed couple and entered the villa.

After Li Yang entered the villa, Miss Lily remembered something. "I clearly saw Mister Mu Yi go up the stairs, so why did we see him outside? Could it be that my eyesight was blurred or I remembered wrong?" Li Yang originally wanted to use the Evasion Technique after arriving at the villa to enter, but never thought that he would meet the two people here.

...

Within Li Yang's bedroom.

Li Yang closed his eyes and sat with his legs crossed. Above the bed, strands of green qi streams naturally entered his body, and the blade radiance refinement method within the 'Seven Astral Heavenly Extremes' began to flow in Li Yang's mind. He immediately began to control the Xiantian qi within the dantian's 'nebula' started cultivating...

